C]

410031

T

MEMOIRS

OF THE

CHEVALIER DE JOHNSTONE.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL FRENCH M.S. OF THE CHEVALIER.

BY

CHARLES WINCHESTER,

ADVOCATE, ABERDEEN.

VOLUME SECOND.

ABERDEEN: D. WYLLIE & SON,

Booksellers to the Queen,

AND H.R.H. THE PRINCE OF WALES.

1871.

DA814

JOHNSTONE, J

G. CORNWALL AND SONS, PRINTERS AND LITHOGRAPHERS, ABERDEEN.

SE

The to t Che Rev rons nepl orig use, man to tl tine and who grat

as m have first.

PREFACE

TO THE

SECOND AND THIRD VOLUMES

OF THE

Memoirs of the Chebalier de Johnstone.

EN.

THE favourable reception given by my friends and the public to the translation of the First Volume of the Memoirs of the Chevalier de Johnstone,-not less than the flattering notices in Reviews of the work, and the generous and unsolicited patronage of my friend, Mr. Leslie of Powis, the great-grand nephew of the Chevalier, and the honoured owner of the original M.S., of which the Translator has had such abundant use, -have combined to induce me to answer the calls from many different quarters to give the remaining two volumes to the public. I hope my doing so will not be thought impertinent or presumptuous in taxing the liberality of my friends and supporters, for whom I feel the highest regard, and for whose kindness I am bound to offer my warmest thanks and gratitude; and in bidding them farewell, I hope they will be as much pleased with these two remaining volumes as they have been pleased to express themselves satisfied with the first.

As already stated, the Second Volume contains a narrative of the adventures and hair-breadth escapes of the Chevalier after the Battle of Culloden, till his final escape to Holland, disguised as a domestic in the suite of Lady Jean Douglas; and subsequently of his entering the military service of France, and proceeding to Canada, with the rank of Captain.

The Third Volume contains the History of the War in Canada, in which the Chevalier could not take part against his native country; and having made known his peculiar situation to the French General Montcalm, His Excellency at once absolved him from his engagement. In this way, although a non-combatant, he had the best opportunities of seeing and describing the operations in that celebrated campaign, in which the immortal Wolfe and General Montcalm both fell on the Heights of Abraham, on the same day.

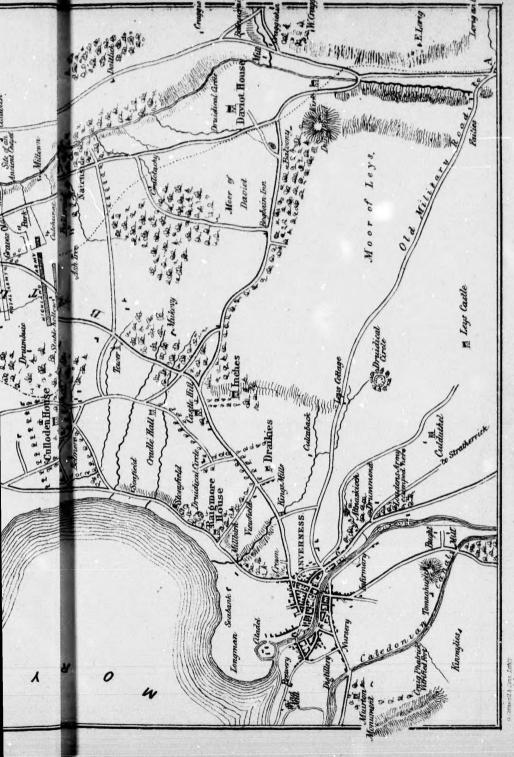
ABERDEEN, April, 1871.

rrative evalier olland, uglas; ice of aptain.

Var in against r situncy at way, ties of I cam-

ntcalm

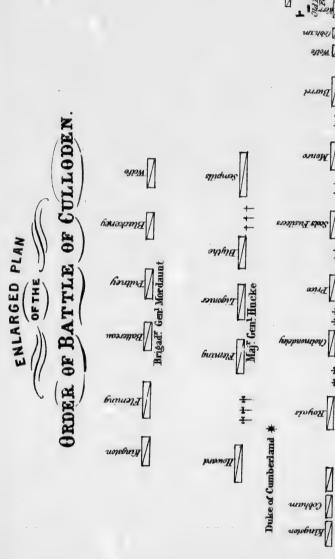
40 4 4 Balafriesh Guidocch Druidical Greles MAP OF CULLODEN MOOR AND SCENES ADJACENT. wygorton. Jette Control and Caims Clava 3 ikle Lenach Dalcross & Castle de la Castle of an Old Chapel 100 mm विश्व व व व व व सम्बद्ध व व व व सम्बद्ध व व व व 4.2°06. 2/100 13 Culloden Hon Druidical Circles along here Several Marise 2 Allurice A STATE OF THE PROPERTY OF THE 1 0 H 1



erne oll & Jone, Letter

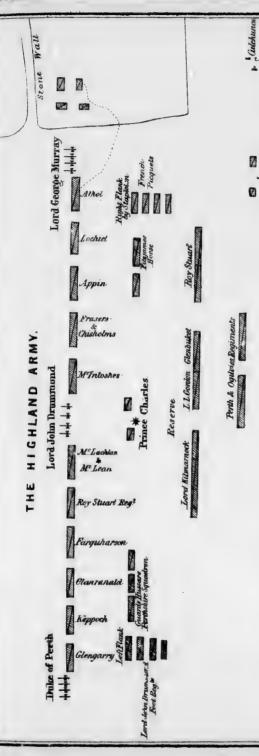






Col. Lord Ancrum
DRAGOGES THE ROYAL ARMY. t Gent Earl of Albemarle

Maj. Gen! Bland



In the Order of Battle the front line of the Highland Army extended from a stone wall, the foundation of which still remains, near the farm of Culchunac, across the moor in a line with Culloden House; that of the Royal Army was drawn up nearly parallel to it, with its left nearly as represented on this enlarged Plan. There are various and conflicting accounts of the order in which the second line or reserve of the Highland Army was placed, but the position represented here is believed to be nearest the truth. In one account it is said that Prince Charles stood in the centre, between the first and second line (*); and in another that he placed himself with two troops of horse on a small eminence wing near the farm houses of Old Lenach, part of which are still standing. The scool line and reserve of the respective Armies were disposed behind the right of the second line (+) about 150 yards north from the farm houses of Culchunac. Some cannon balls having broke ground among the horses' feet, Charles had his face bespattered with dirt, and one of his servants who stood behind him with a led horse was killedstill he did not leave the field till he was compelled to do so by his attendants.

GIVI



ruin lowed Englablood land, the E barou duced fortun for all the ha

MEMOIRS

OF

THE CHEVALIER DE JOHNSTONE.

Volume Second.

GIVING AN ACCOUNT OF HIS HAIRBREADTH ESCAPES AFTER
THE BATTLE OF CULLODEN, TILL HIS FINAL ESCAPE TO
HOLLAND IN THE SUITE OF LADY JEAN DOUGLAS,
DISGUISED AS A SERVANT, AND ENTERING THE FRENCH
SERVICE, AND PROCEEDING TO CANADA.

HE Battle of Culloden, which was lost the 16th of April, more through a series of bad conduct on our part since that of Falkirk, than by any able management of the Duke of Cumberland, in terminating the expedition of Prince Edward, opened scenes of horror to his partisans. The

ruin of many of the most illustrious houses of Scotland followed in a moment the loss of that battle. The scaffolds of England were for a long time innundated every day with the blood of a great number of the gentlemen and Peers of Scotland, the executions of whom furnished a spectacle to amuse the English populace, naturally of a character cruel and barbarous; and the confiscation of their fortunes immediately reduced their families to beggary. Those who had the good fortune to save themselves in foreign countries were consoled for all that they had lost by having escaped a tragical death by the hand of the executioner, and looked upon themselves as once

more highly fortunate; above all, by the humanity and compassion of His Most Christian Majesty, who, in according to them an asylum in France, provided, at the same time, for their subsistence by a guaranteed fund of forty thousand livres per annum, which was distributed in pensions to those unfortunate Scotch victims of their fidelity to their legitimate Prince. These pensions had always been paid regularly; but in the partition of this fund they had not always followed the intentions of His Majesty, who had destined it solely to the Scots in the suite of Prince Edward.

As soon as the Duke of Cumberland was assured by the total dispersion of the Highlanders at Ruthven that he had nothing more to fear of seeing them re-appear with arms in their hands, he divided his army into different detachments, that he might send them to scour the country of the Highlanders, with a view to sack their habitations and These detachments, as the executioners of make prisoners. the Duke of Cumberland, perpetrated the most horrible cruelties,-burning the mansions of the Chiefs of clans, violating their wives and daughters, making it an amusement to themselves to catch the unfortunate Highlanders whenever they fell into their hands, and in that surpassing in barbarity the savages of America, the most ferocious.* In the meantime, the principal object that the Duke had in view by these detachments was to seize Prince Edward, who escaped with much difficulty from their vigilance, although pursued very hotly; and in his instructions to commandants of detachments, he recommended them always not to make prisoners,

*The Duke of Cumberland is dead, universally detested among Christian powers for the unheard of cruelties which he had perpetrated in Scotland. One may apply to him that which is said by Herodotus,—that the Deity proportions punishments to crimes; and that for great offences, punishments are always great,—for he had his body consumed with corruption by the violence of his disease during many years before his entire dissolution—leaving unto posterity but the remembrance that there could have existed, under a human shape, a monster so ferocious and unpatural.

but of I pris to b conf ordo arm allor Cun in a of n pass rebe place treas same Duk in th those cross tinua look the s cult, this crue and of t

myso

Stua

briq

inden the la and comording to time, for thousand s to those legitimate larly; but lowed the ely to the

ed by the that he ear with erent decountry of tions and tioners of horrible of clans, musement whenever barbarity he meanby these ped with ued very f detachorisoners.

g Christian
n Scotland.
the Deity
es, punishruption by
ssolution—
ye existed,

but to poinard them on the spot. In point of fact, the Court of London had been greatly embarrassed as to having such a prisoner—the Parliament of England not seeing their way to bring him to trial as a subject of Great Britain by his incontestable right to the crown. They sent, at the sametime, orders to all the towns and villages on the borders of the two arms of the sea, between Inverness and Edinburgh, not to allow any person to pass without a passport from the Duke of Cumberland or the Magistrates of Edinburgh; and the same in all the seaports of Great Britain, prohibiting all captains of merchant vessels to receive any one on board without a passport, or to contribute in any manner to the help of a rebel,—a name which they then gave to us as vanquished, in place of heroes, if we were taken, under the pain of high treason, to be prosecuted criminally, and subjected to the same punishment as those who had taken up arms. The Duke of Cumberland detached at the same time his cavalry in the low country, at the entrance of the hills, to arrest all those who should present themselves without passports to cross the first arm of the sea, with orders to keep up continual patrols the whole length of the coast, and to keep a look out through all the cities and villages in the vicinity of the sea. Thus, by all these arrangements, it had become difficult, almost impossible, to save themselves from the fury of this sanguinary Duke, who, by the excess of his unheard of cruelties among civilized nations, fell at last into discredit and into contempt of all honest men of the English nation, of those even who never were partisans of the House of Stuart, and he procured for himself at London the soubriquet of "The Butcher."*

In all the troublesome positions in which I have found myself involved, having been preserved in foreign lands, Pro-

^{*} The Duke of Cumberland was obliged to have an Act of Parliament to indemnify him for the cruelties he had committed in Scotland, contrary to the laws of the Realm, and to shelter him from prosecutions.

vidence seemed always there to plunge me into unfortunate encounters impossible to be foreseen, and to cause me to touch often very closely to the scaffold, holding me in the end by the hand to draw me from the precipice, as if the Supreme Being wished to manifest to me all his power and his infinite goodness. All the course of my life has been the same—having often found myself ready to perish without the least appearance or probability of escaping death, but saved as by a miracle when I was resigned to die. The long train of pains and excessive miseries which I had experienced almost without interruption were not without their uses to me, since they made me approbate tranquillity of spirit and health as real inestimable riches, and rendered me content with simple necessaries of life, without ambition, without desire of abundance of fertune, nor forgetful of their magnificence, I desired only always to have serenity of soul, and to pass the rest of my days without chagrin and without inquietude.* It is certain that the cessation of pains and persecutions produces pleasure and a happy state.

My friendship for the unfortunate Macdonald of Scothouse, who was killed at my side at the Battle of Culloden, had engaged me to accompany him to the charge with his regiment. We were on the left of our army, and at the distance of about twenty paces from the enemy, when the rout commenced to become general, before even we had made our charge on the left. Almost at the same instant that I

saw knov most incre turn and upon myse boots whic runn Robe the] behir Princ horse tion o disco Princ alrea formarmy. that ' being enem firedoubt rende than ceived

horsei

to say

agility

about

believ

^{* &}quot;It is certain, says Lady Wortley Montague, "that there are no real pleasures but of the senses; and the life of man is so short that he ought not to dream but to make the present agreeable." "Moderation of conduct," says a Chinese author, "is a virtue which takes its source in tranquility of soul. When we repress the violence of the passions, when we accustom ourselves to face with cool deliberation the accidents of life—when we always put a guard against every troublesome impression—when we combat without ceasing the first impulses of a blind choler—when we give ourselves time to weigh all—we shall enjoy therefrom that tranquility of soul of which moderation in all things will be the fruit."—Military Art of the Chinese.

nate e to the the and 1 the t the $\mathbf{a}\mathbf{v}\mathbf{e}\mathbf{d}$ train nced es to spirit conthout gnifind to thout and

Scotoden,
h his
t the
n the
made
hat I

ought
of conn tranhen we
---when
hen we
ye give
ility of
t of the

saw poor Scot fall, (the most worthy man that I had ever known, and with whom I had been allied in friendship the most pure from the commencement of the expedition,) to the increase of my horror, I beheld the Highlanders around me turning their backs to fly. I remained at first immoveable and stupefied. I fired with fury my blunderbuss and pistols upon the enemy, and I endeavoured immediately to save myself like the others; but having charged on foot and in boots, I felt myself so fatigued by the marshy ground, in which there was water up to my ankle, that in place of running, with pain could I march. I had left my servant, Robertson, upon the eminence with my horses, where the Prince was during the battle, about three hundred toises behind us, ordering him always to hold by the servants of the Prince, in order that I might be able more easily to find my horses in case I should have need of them. My first attention on returning was to fix my eyes upon that eminence, to discover Robertson. It was in vain. I neither saw the Prince, nor his servants, nor anybody on horseback—all being already gone and out of sight. I only saw a terrible platform-the field of battle, from the right to the left of our army, all covered with Highlanders dispersed and running all that their legs could carry them, to save themselves. Not being able longer to sustain myself upon my legs, and the enemy always advancing very slowly, but redoubling their fire-my mind agitated and fluctuating with indecision, in doubt whether I should be killed or whether I should surrender myself a prisoner, which was a thousand times worse than death upon the field of battle—all on a sudden I perceived a horse about thirty paces before me, which had not a horseman upon it. The idea of still having it in my power to save myself, gave me new strength, and inspired me with agility. I ran and seized the bridle, which was entangled about the arms of a man extended upon the ground, whom I believed to be dead; but I was confounded when the cowardly poltroon, who had no other hurt than fright, dared to remain in the most horrible fire to dispute with me the horse, at about twenty paces from the enemy, all my menaces not being able to make him quit the bridle. While we were disputing together, there came a burst of a cannon charge with grape shot, which fell at my feet, and which covered us with mud, but without making any impression upon this original, who remained constantly determined to retain the horse. Fortunately for me there passed close to us, Finlay Cameron, an officer of the regiment of Lochiel, a big, young man, of about twenty years of age, six feet high, brave, and heroic. I called him to mine aid-"Oh, Finlay," said I to him, "this man will not give me up this horse." Poor Finlay joined me at the instant as a shock of lightning, presented a pistol immediately at the head of this man, and threatened to blow out his brains if he hesitated a moment to This man, who had the appearance of a quit the bridle. servant, then took his resolution to take himself off with a good grace. In possession of the horse, I attempted, with many ineffectual strides, to mount on horseback, but I made these ineffectual attempts in vain. Finding myself without strength, and totally done up, I recalled again poor Finlay, who was already some paces distant from me, to assist me to mount. He returned, lifted me up easily in his arms like an infant, and placed me on the horse, across as a sack full. giving, at the same time, a stroke to the horse to make him go off, then offering me his wishes that I might have the good fortune to escape, he flew off like a hart, and was instantly out of sight. We were not at the time more distant from the enemy than about twenty-five paces when he left me. I found myself about thirty or forty paces off, I then adjusted myself upon the horse, placed my feet in the stirrup, running as fast as the bad jade was capable of. I was under too much obligation to Finlay Cameron not to have searched continually to inform myself of his fate, but without ever

havi far any to k men Geo but ship. in e ever trooi than his b with that ten c eye c rende his p sence every well: deter invol time

ketry cours the soften Rothi about aged

affect

having had the least light thrown upon it. This trait was far more noble and generous on his part, as I had never any particular connection with him. How difficult it is to know men! I had always known from the commencement of our expedition that I was aide-de-camp to Lord George Murray, a character pleasant, honest, and brave; but he never made me the smallest demonstration of friendship, notwithstanding I was indebted to him for my life in exposing generously his own to save me! There was every appearance that I saved also the life of this poltroon by awaking him from his terrific panic, for in less than two minutes the English army would have passed over The cowardice of this man has furnished me since with materials for reflection, and I was very much convinced that for one brave man who perished in the routs, there were ten cowards. The greater the danger that flashes upon the eye of a coward blinds him, and deprives him of reflection, renders him incapable of reasoning with himself upon his position. He loses the power of thinking, with the presence of mind so necessary in great dangers, and seeing everything troubles, his stupefaction costing him his life as well as his honour; in place of which a brave man firmly and determinedly sees all the peril in which he finds himself involved, but his coolness makes him remember at the same time the means of extricating himself out of a bad case, if he has any resource, and he profits by it.

When I was beyond the reach of this horrible fire of musketry, I made a stop to breathe and deliberate upon the course I should take, and the route I should follow. During the stay that our army made at Inverness, I have been often in a pleasure party at the mansion of Mr. Grant of Rothiemurchus, which is in the middle of the mountains, about six leagues from that city. This worthy man, then aged about sixty years, of pleasing manners, formed an affection for me, and often repeated to me assurances of his

remain rse, at es not were charge ered us on this ain the Finlay young

d I to

Poor htning, an, and ment to ce of a with a d, with I made without Finlay, t me to like an ck full, ake him he good astantly

rom the
When
adjusted
running
der too
earched
ut ever

friendship; also his eldest son, with whom I had been a comrade at school, but who was in the service of King George. Rothiemurchus, the father, was a partisan of the house of Stuart; but from prudence did not declare himself openly; neither did his vassals, who remained neuters with their chief during the whole expedition. His castle is in the most beautiful situation, surpassing imagination, and which answers poetic descriptions the most romantic; situated upon the banks of a most beautiful river, the Spey, which winds in serpentine curls in the midst of a verdant plain, extending to about a quarter of a league in breadth to about two leagues in length. All around this plain one beholds the mountains, which rise in an amphitheatre, the one above the other, the summits of some of which are covered with wood, and others present the most beautiful verdure. It seems as if nature had wearied itself in forming so beautiful a retreat, in lavishing with profusion all that one could imagine of the beauties of the country, which enchanted me above all that I had ever seen. During two months that our army reposed at Inverness, on its return from England, I passed as much as possible of my time in these delicious scenes, which I quitted always with regret; and I found myself at the Castle of Rothiemurchus when they came to announce to us that the Duke of Cumberland had passed the Spey with his army on the side of Elgin, and that he approached towards Inverness. I departed at once to rejoin our army, but with a sensible regret at quitting these beautiful scenes, and the society of Rothiemurchus, the most amiable man in the world-mild, polite, upright, of an equable character, naturally jovial, of much spirit, with a great fund of good sense and judgment. On bidding him adieu, he clasped me in his arms, embraced me tenderly with tears in his eyes, saying to me, "My dear boy, if your affairs should take a bad turn, opposed to the English army, as that may possibly happen, come my way to conceal yourself at my dwelling, and I will be hill wh tati rigl paceme, taki unt through the Investment

tano

quai abou upor enen conc whei part once minu ation High and ' ness. the s to fis myse of de for a path but

com-

eorge.

use of

penly;

r chief

beau-

nswers

on the

inds in

xtend-

ut two

ds the

ove the

wood,

ms as if

reat, in

of the

l that I

reposed

ssed as

, which

at the

e to us

with his

towards

ut with

and the

in the

natur-

d sense

ne in his

aying to

ad turn,

happen,

d I will

be answerable for your safety, life for life." The Highland hills being in effect a sure asylum against all the searches which the English troops could make, I decided without hesitation to take the road to Rothiemurchus, which was on our right from the field of battle; but I had not made a hundred paces when I perceived a corps of the enemy's cavalry before me, which blocked up the road. I then retraced my way, taking that which led to Inverness, which I followed just until I saw an eminence on which the bulk of our army had thrown itself on that side, and I judged consequently that the principal pursuit of the enemy would be on the road to Inverness. I quitted likewise the road, and crossed straight through the fields without any other design than that of distancing myself from the enemy as much as I possibly could.

Having arrived on the border of the river Ness, a quarter of a league higher than the town of Inverness, and about as far from the field of battle, I stopped to deliberate upon the route which I ought to take, the cavalry of the enemy upon the road to Rothiemurchus having totally disconcerted me,-my mind agitated and tormented to know where to go in an unknown place, having never been in that part of the mountains, or west of Inverness. I heard all at once a very brisk firing at the town, which lasted for some minutes. As one is inclined in misfortunes to fill the imagination with vain hopes, I thought at first that it was the Highlanders that were defending the city against the English, and I regretted exceedingly having quitted the road to Inverness. I was descending a footpath which led to the town by the side of the river, where I had passed many times in going to fish; having found it, I plunged into it, without giving myself time for reflection that it was by no means susceptible of defence, not being surrounded but by a wall, proper only for any enclosure, and I proceeded forward along this footpath in order to bring myself with despatch to Inverness; but I had not gone a hundred paces down when I encountered a Highlander coming from the town, who assured me that the English had entered it without any resistance. He told me, at the same time, that all the road from the field of battle to Inverness was strewed with the dead, the English cavalry having made the principal pursuit from that quarter, and the streets of the town were equally covered with dead bodies-the bridge at the end of the chief street having been all at once blocked up by the precipitation of the fugitives. I was not displeased to find that my first conjectures were not unfortunately too just, since following the road from the town I should have made myself among the number of the carcases. I then retraced my steps with a heart more poignant than ever, and plunged in the deepest sorrow. All my hopes vanished. I did not dream further than to be at a distance from these dismal scenes. The Highlander having told me that he was going to Fort-Augustus, a fortress about eight leagues from Inverness, which our army had demolished some time before, I took again the great road under his conduct, proposing that we should go together. We arrived at midnight at Fort-Augustus, without having seen a single cottage on our way; and I set my food on the ground in a small hut which had the name of a public-house, the hostess of which had no other thing to give me but a morsel of bread, a cup of elixir vitee, from grain, and a little hay for my horse, which gave me the most pleasure; for although I had taken nothing for twenty-four hours, the terrible vicissitudes throughout a journey the most cruel and dismal I had ever experienced, sufficed completely to deprive me of appetite and all inclination to eat. Being too much overcome, and equally fatigued in body and mind, I reposed during two or three hours upon a bench before the fire, for as to beds, there were none there.

I did not cease in the meantime to look upon Rothiemurchus as my only resource for saving me; but his castle being situated to the south of Inverness, by the road which I had

take castl the 1 land of F Bade Till me a this place rallie ing i by a anno was the b were which order so vi I cou who. once serve greate fieldmade ances of his

> at the severe These friend

is abo

taken to the west, I found myself much more distant from his castle at Fort Augustus than from the field of battle. I left the public-house before it was day, having found another Highlander, who conducted me to Garviemore, twelve miles south of Fort Augustus. Next day I found myself at Ruthven, in Badenoch, which is about two leagues from Rothiemurchus. Till then, I had not again met with anybody who could give me any news; but I was agreeably surprised at finding that this little market town was in fact, by mere haphazard, the place of rendezvous, where a great party of our army was rallied; for they had not pointed out any place for our rallying in case of defeat. In an instant I saw myself surrounded by a great many of my comrades, who pressed forward to announce to me that at Ruthven and its neighbourhood there was a great part of our army, that the Highlanders were in the best of dispositions for taking their revenge, and that they were waiting with impatience the return of an aide-de-camp which my Lord George had sent to the Prince to receive his orders, and to be led again to battle. I had never known joy so vivid as that which I then felt—the tears came to my eyes. I could not better compare my state than to that of an invalid, who, after having languished a long time, finds himself all at once in perfect health by a sudden revolution. Having observed that there was not accommodation at Ruthven—the greater part of our army having been obliged to lie on the field—I did not dismount from horseback; and after having made enquiries after Finlay Cameron to offer him the assurances of my gratitude, without being able to learn anything of his fate, I continued my route to go to Killihuntly, which is about a quarter of a league from Ruthven.

When our army went to the north of Scotland, I stopped at the house of Mr. Gordon of Killihuntly, where I passed several days very agreeably. It was full of genteel people. These amiable persons welcomed my return with all the friendship possible, and I found my Lord and my Lady Ogil-

hiemurle being h I had

assured

istance. he field

English

juarter,

th dead

g been

gitives.

es were

om the

re poig-

All my

t a dising told

s about

nad de-

d under

er. We

g seen a ground

use, the a morsel

ttle hay

lthough terrible

dismal I

e me of

ercome,

ring two to beds.

Ca

co

tov

ple

me

to

reg

dev

sur

the

riv

ma

san

it i

lift

wh

all,

test

see

to

him

bar

con

to]

beau

Rot

Inve

to m

of t

any

also Lew

of A

priso

vie at their house, with many other friends. Not having partaken of anything for forty hours, save a morsel of old bread and a cup of usquebagh (water distilled from barley), I did great honour to the good cheer which my Lady Killihuntly set before us; and as I had not enjoyed a bed since our departure from Inverness to go to face the enemy, as soon as the supper was finished I went to bed, with my mind much refreshed and tranquil, and slept eighteen hours in one slumber. The next day after dinner I went to Ruthven; but the aide-de-camp not having again returned, there was no news whatever; and I returned to sleep at Killihuntly. I was charmed to see there the gaiety of the Highlanders, who appeared to be returned more from a ball than from a defeat.

Having passed the night with impatience and restlessness, I got up betimes, and proceeded with despatch to Ruthven, to learn if the aide-de-camp had returned. I was astonished to find misery and melancholy painted on the countenances of all those whom I met, and I soon learned that the cause of this was but too well accounted for. The first officer whom I met told me that the aide-de-camp had returned, and that he had reported for all the answer on the part of Prince Edward that every one could adopt the means of saving himself as he best could—a reply melancholy and disheartening for the brave people who had sacrificed themselves for him.

I returned at once to Killihuntly with a heart rent and overwhelmed with misery, in order to take leave, and render thanks to my Lord and my Lady Killihuntly for their civilities. My Lady offered me an asylum in their mountains, which are very isolated and difficult of access, telling me that she would construct a cabin in the interior the most concealed, where she would lay in for me a magazine of provisions of every kind; that she would not leave me without money; and that she would give me a flock to keep of six or eight sheep. She added that the fastness which she proposed for me being on the border of a lake about a quarter of a league from the

having of old rley), I y Killied since as soon d much ie slumen; but was no ntly. I ers, who a defeat. lessness. thven, to nished to ances of cause of er whom d that he Edward elf as he for the

rent and
id render
eir civiliountains,
me that
oncealed,
visions of
hey; and
ht sheep.
he being
from the

Castle, where a stream entered it abounding with trout, I could amuse myself in fishing, and that she would often walk towards that quarter to see her shepherd. The project at first pleased me greatly. my misfortunes having metamorphosed me suddenly into a philosopher, and I would have consented to pass all my life in this solitude, provided I could have regained my mind into its natural and tranquil state, and devoid of agitation. Besides, we were at the approach of summer, and the natural beauties of the place, the cascades, the sheets of water, the valleys between the mountains, the rivers, the lakes, and the woods; nature there displayed a magnificence, a majesty that commanded veneration, a thousand savage charms that surpassed infinitely artificial beauties; it is there that a painter, a poet would feel their imagination lifting them up, warming them, and filling them with ideas which become ineffaceable in the memory of men; above all, the amiable society of M. and Madlle. Killihuntly, who had testified to me so much friendship, in this moment I did not see any better to do; but before my deciding on it I wished to revisit my good friend, Rothiemurchus, to consult with him if there was no means of finding an opportunity of embarking me for foreign parts, in order that I might not be continually between life and death. I went, after mid-day, to Rothiemurchus, which is at the other extremity of this beautiful valley, about two leagues from Killihuntly; but Rothiemurchus, the father, was not at home, having gone to Inverness immediately on receiving the news of our defeat, to make his court to the Duke of Cumberland, more for fear of the evil that this barbarous Duke could do him, than for any attachment to the House of Hanover. I found his son, also the Chevalier Gordon of Park, Lieutenant-Colonel Lord Lewis Gordon, Gordon of Cobairdie, his brother, and Gordon of Abachie.

Rothiemurchus's son advised me to deliver myself up a prisoner to the Duke of Cumberland, in the view of the diffi-

H

tl

p

aj

Ι

se

he

tin

str

sin

my

dep

Col

mile

call

ston

mad

bein:

them

whic

was:

for fi

berry

beaut

taken

Lady

by sa

beaut

and c

Great

Edwa his : :

burgh

their f

culty, almost impossibility of my being able to escape, alleging, at the same time, that the first who surrendered themselves prisoners would not fail to obtain their pardon; and he added that he would return immediately to Inverness. where he had escorted my Lord Balmerino, who had followed his advice in delivering himself up a prisoner. I did not relish at all the perfidious counsels of my old comrade, who was of a character quite different from that of his father. I replied to him that the very thought of seeing myself in a dungeon in irons made me tremble. As long as I could I would preserve my liberty, and when I was no longer able to avoid falling into the hands of the Duke of Cumberland, he could then make of me all that he could wish. I would then be resigned to all. The unfortunate Lord Balmerino had his head cut off at London during the time that I was concealed there, and he died with an astonishing constancy and bravery. worthy of the ancient Romans. The servant of Rothiemurchus told us that having gone through the field of battle, there would appear to have been more killed of the English than the Highlanders, which gave us some consolation in learning that they had not gained the victory at small cost. He added that the Duke of Cumberland after having left our wounded on the field of battle for forty hours quite naked, had sent detachments to kill all those whose robust constitutions had been able to stand against a continual outpour of pelting rain. and that these orders had been executed with the utmost rigour, without sparing any one.*

M. Chevalier Gordon, his brother, and Abachie having made up their minds to go to their own estates, in the county of Banff, about ten or twelve leagues to the south of Rothiemurchus, they proposed to me to go with them. I consented at the instant, the more willingly that my brother-in-law,

^{*} The Duke of Cumberland was obliged to have an Act of Parliament to indemnify him for the cruelties which he had committed in Scotland, contrary to the laws of the realm, and to shelter him from prosecutions.

Rollo, now Lord Rollo, Peer of Scotland, was established in the town of Banff, capital of that province, and being a seaport, where he had the inspection of merchant vessels, by an appointment which he had obtained lately from Government, I hoped, by his means, to find an opportunity to pass beyond sea. So I abandoned without difficulty the project of shepherd of my Lady Killihuntly, which had held me too long time in a state of uncertainty of my fate; besides, being a stranger in the mountainous districts, without knowing a single word of their language, determined me entirely to put myself under the auspices of M. Chevalier Gordon.

After a stay of two or three days at Rothiemurchus, I departed with the Chevalier Gordon, his brother, Gordon of Cobairdie, and Gordon of Abachie, and we slept at some miles from the house of one of their friends, near a mountain called Cairngorm, where the shepherds often find precious stones of different kinds without knowing their value. I made, during some years, a collection of these stones, before being at the place which produces them, and I have found them very beautiful; above all a ruby, of great beauty, which piece did not cost me more than a crown, and when it was polished, I refused to give it to the Duke of Hamilton for fifty guineas. This stone had the thickness of a bean or berry; the colour somewhat dark; brilliancy like the most beautiful diamond; and all the jewellers of Edinburgh had taken it for an oriental ruby. I made a present of it to my Lady Jean Douglas, who repaid me amply, some time after, by saving my life. I had also found a hyacinth of a very beautiful brilliancy, and a topaz as thick as a pigeon's egg, and of a fine colour, upon which I engraved the arms of Great Britain; and I made a present of them both to Prince Edward; the hyacinth at Perth, on attaching my fortune to his; and the topaz, with his arms, on our arrival at Edin-These gentlemen having agreed, at the entreaties of their friend, to adjourn the next day to his house, I accom-

having county Rothiensented -in-law,

alleg-

them-

rness,

lowed

d not

e, who

er. I

f in a

ould J

able to

nd, he

d then

and his

rcealed

ravery,

urchus

. there

sh than

earning

e added

ounded

ad sent

ons had

ng rain,

utmost

iament to and, conns.

panied him with great good will, and forgetting for the moment my disasters. I rose the next day, in the morning, at an early hour, running immediately to those hills among the shepherds, where I found some beautiful topazes, two of which I made a present of to the Duke of York, at Paris, sufficiently grand to serve his seal. On my return to dinner, seeing me enter the Lodge with a great sack of pebbles, they all burst out in a great roar of laughter; and the Chevalier Gordon exhorted me very severely to think rather of saving myself from the power of the police, than to collect pebbles. I had my mind occupied as much as they with our unfortunate lot, and the scaffold sufficiently vividly impressed upon my imagination, but I was satisfied at the same time, that the possession of a few pebbles would not accelerate my fate if it was my destiny to be hanged; and the search of these stones dissipated for a moment the ideas which absorbed my companions in misfortune.

We arrived in the county of Banff the fourth day of our departure from Rothiemurchus, where it became necessary for us to separate—the populace being all Calvinists, and violent against the House of Stuart. Having lodged the next night at the house of Mr. Stuart, the Presbyterian minister, but a very good man, and secretly in the interest of Prince Edward, on rising in the morning I exchanged my clothes of the Highland garb with his servant for an old peasant dress, all in rags, offensive to the smell, and in appearance as if it had not been in use for many years, nor since it had cleaned his master's stables; for it had the smell of dung to be felt at a distance. I made a complete exchange with him even to stockings and shoes, in every one of which, however, he found his account, and I much more than he with these tatters, which were calculated to assist in saving my life. Thus metamorphosed we took leave of one another, every one separating and taking a different route. M. the Chevalier Gordon advised me to go and sleep in his house at

Par hou app law they prel Duk his hous and in th respe my 1 regre told men to ex my } myse her a house leavin the t notice my pe begga Then diers. misery myseli full o Supre

tunity

that I

in app

the thing, mong to of Paris, mer, they valier aving bbles. r uncressed time, te my ech of

sorbed

of our essary s, and e next inister, Prince clothes easant nce as it had f dung change which, han he saving nother, M. the ouse at

Park. I followed his advice the more willingly that his house, not being but a league and a half from Banff, I was approaching towards having an interview with my brother-inlaw Rollo, but not without dread that some of the detachments' they had in that quarter might be sent to search for and apprehend the Chevalier Gordon, who was a near relative of the Duke of Gordon, and might be able to make me prisoner at his place. I found Mrs. Menzies, his cousin-german, in his house.—a most amiable lady, full of spirit and good sense; and I had passed some time very agreeably in her company in the house of Mr. Duff, Provost of Banff, a house the most respectable and the most amiable that I have ever known in my life; and quitted their charming society with the greatest regret possible to rejoin our army at Inverness. Madame told me that there were in the town of Banff four hundred men of the English troops; and she exhorted me strongly not to expose myself by going there. But as an interview with my brother-in-law was my only hope of being able to save myself in a distant land, I determined to go contrary to her advice, and I departed the next day on foot from the house of the Chevalier Gordon, towards nine o'clock at night, leaving my horse there till my return. I met, on entering the town, many English soldiers, who took not the least notice of me, which gave me the most favourable augury of my peasant's disguise, for my clothes were so bad the poorest beggar would have blushed to have carried them on his back. Then my blood boiled in my veins at the sight of these soldiers, whom I regarded as the authors of the pains and misery, which I began to feel; and I was not able to allow myself to fix my eyes upon them but with rage and my soul full of fury. I continued my way, praying fervently to the Supreme Being to grant us once more only one single opportunity of avenging ourselves of their cruelties at Culloden, and that I would thus die tranquil and satisfied, - prayers which in appearance were never granted.

I went straight to the house of Mr. Duff, where I had been so agreeable so little time before. He was secretly a partisan of the Prince, but prudent and discreet, he did not declare his way of thinking but to his friends. He was the most amiable man in the world, endowed with all the good qualities possible, and of real merit. He has the most equable character, pleasant, gay, enjoying great good sense, judgment, spirit, and discernment. Mrs. Duff, his spouse, resembled in every respect the character of her husband; and their two daughters, of whom the youngest sister was a dazzling beauty, were exact copies of their father and mother. Everybody in the house of Mr. Duff had but one way of thinking, and it was the most delicious society, that I regretted leaving as long as I lived. The maid-servant who opened the door for me, did not recognize me on account of the oddity of my disguise. I told her that I was charged with a letter for her master, to be delivered into his own hands; and I begged her to inform him of it. Mr. Duff descended, and at first did not recognize me more than his maid-servant; but having fixed his eyes upon me for a moment, a torrent of tears succeeded his surprise. He exhorted his servant strongly to be faithful in guarding the secret. Mrs. Duff and their daughters being gone to bed, he conducted me into a chamber, and sent, upon the instant, his servant to find out my brother-inlaw, who had not returned to his house; and all the inquiries that could be made to find him were fruitless. My sister was still at the house of her father-in-law, Lord Rollo, at Duncraib, as it was not long that he had held his charge at Banff. My intention not being to sleep there if I should be able to find my brother-in-law immediately, and ascertain if I could hope for his services in a moment so critical for me, the neighbourhood of soldiers having too greatly disturbed me to be able to be tranquil, without fear at every instant of being discovered, I had resolved to leave Banff before day to return to the Castle of the Chevalier Gordon. Mr. Duff

ret be

the

fix ref and int tha seiz stra the Thu arm shor it w for feeb thro and ber, saw little Hay agita rush prise adora came distu were court

quari

left t

not 1

returned at one o'clock in the morning, and I then went to bed, without being able to shut my eyes.

had

tly a d not

s the

good uable

ment, led in

r two

eauty,

ody in

and it ng as

or for

y dis-

or her

ed her

st did

naving rs suc-

to be

laugh-

er, and her-in-

quiries

ter was Dun-

rge at ould be

rtain if

me,-

sturbed instant

ore day

r. Duff

I arose as soon as the day began to appear, and resumed the taterdemalions. Seated in an arm-chair, with my eyes fixed on the fire, in a deep reverie, and plunged in an abyss of reflections which my situation furnished me with in abundance, suddenly the maid-servant entered, and rushed by into my apartment, announcing to me that I was lost, and that the court-yard of the house was full of soldiers to seize me. Less than that sufficed to rouse me from my abstractions. I looked up at the window, and saw actually the soldiers in the court-yard, as the servant had told me. Thus convinced ocularly of my misfortune, I returned to the arm-chair full of resignation, regarding myself as a man who should shortly end his days. I conjectured immediately that it was the servant who had betrayed me, having some soldier for a lover, as is generally the case. There remained but a feeble spark of hope of my being able to make my way through the soldiers, with one of my pistols in each hand; and I kept my eyes always fixed upon the door of the chamber, in order to rush upon the soldiers as a lion the moment I saw them appear. Miserable resource! in which I had but little confidence to rely on; but this was the last resort. Having passed about a quarter of an hour in these violent agitations, at last the door of my chamber flew open, and I rushed with precipitation to attack them. But what a surprise! In place of the soldiers I espied the beautiful and adorable Miss Duff, the younger sister, out of breath, who came as a guardian angel to inform me not to be any longer disturbed; that it was nothing more than the soldiers who were fighting among themselves; that they had entered the court to conceal themselves from their officers; and that their quarrel having exploded itself in a few fisticuffs, they had left the court-yard together. She was of rare beauty, and was not more than eighteen years of age. I seized her in my

arms, pressed her to my bosom, and gave her a thousand tender embraces from the bottom of my heart. In an instant the whole house was assembled in my chamber, to congratulate me upon my deliverance—the noise of the soldiers having made every one rise, and it was scarcely six o'clock in the morning. Convinced of the sincere friendship and esteem of all this amiable family, one of my great solicitudes during this adventure was, that through their too great anxiety for me some one of them might be apt to betray me innocently, had it not been for Mr. Duff, by whom I was reassured from his coolness and presence of mind.

My brother-in-law came to see me the moment after this alarm. He made me all the protestations possible of friendship, at the same time that he excused himself for not being able to contribute by any means to afford me an opportunity of embarking for a foreign land; all the vessels at Banff being strictly inspected before their departure by the different officers of Government; and he advised me very strongly to retire into the mountainous districts as the only course to adopt. I confess that I was indignant at him, the more so that he was under obligations to me without number. I answered him that I had no need of his counsels, but his services. He took himself off, after having staid a quarter of an hour with me as upon nettles, and I have never seen him since, or had any accounts of him. He knew all the captains of merchant vessels at Banff; so that if he had been willing to serve me, he could have certainly found some one of the number who could have taken me into his vessel disguised as a sailor, which would have saved me from an infinitude of pains, and sufferings the most cruel, which I endured before being saved; but he did not wish to expose himself to the least risk for his brother-in-law, who on all occasions ever gave him the most substantial proofs of his friendship; and he was of a character that would not put himself to any inconvenience, not even for his own father, or all those who existed on earth; regarding

him his are how thos thre dissi expe mad dece servi Rolle had then they comn havir don. when ness, did n me w his so army, comm but I he wo

feated

derived were no effect prejudi

[†] It my nep Raoul o

isand

stant

ratu-

wing
the

em of

r this

r me , had

m his

· this

iend-

being unity

Banff

erent

dy to

se to

ore so I an-

vices.

hour

ce, or

mer-

serve

ımber

sailor, s, and

aved:

or his

most

racter

en for

rding

himself born for himself, without bowels of compassion for his species in their misfortunes and sufferings. Misfortunes are the touchstone to prove men; and I have learned by mine how little one can count upon friendship in general.* All those from whom I expected assistance in my misfortunes threw off the mask, and discovered to me their falsehood and dissimulation; and it was only those from whom I did not expect any service that turned out true friends. Experience made me know in one day many, in place of having been deceived all my life. I had even rendered most essential service to my brother-in-law a little time before. Lord Rollo, his father, a violent partisan of the House of Stuart, had taken up arms in 1715, in an attempt which was then made to re-establish that House upon the throne; but they were put to the rout by the English army, under the command of the Duke of Argyle; and his Lordship, after having remained concealed for some years, obtained his pardon. After having passed a night at his Lordship's house when our army made its retreat from Stirling to go to Inverness, he pleaded incessantly that his age and his infirmities did not permit him to join Prince Edward; and he conjured me with clasped hands to proceed to Banff express, to order his son, my brother-in-law, immediately to join himself to our army, under the pain of never seeing him in his lifetime. I communicated to my brother-in-law the orders of his father; but I made him aware at the same time of the misery to which he would expose his wife and family in case we should be defeated. My counsels were salutary to him; since a short

^{* &}quot;In the midst of disgraces the most frightful," says M. Bedoyere, "I derived a sweet satisfaction to know men and all their perfidiousness—they were no longer concealed from my eyes—I saw them such as they are in effect—advantages reserved to the unfortunate, whose reason, divested of prejudices, is the lot and the consolation."

[†] It appears lately proved by the archives in the Tower of London, that my nephew, at present Lord Rollo, a peer of Scotland, is descended from Raoul or Rollon, Duke of Normandy, by lawful wedlock.

time after he found himself in possession of the lands and titles of the House of Rollo, instead of dying upon the scaffold, or being a mendicant in a foreign land. It is true, I had the interest of my nephew and sister more in view than his.

Having passed the whole day at the house of Mr. Duff, with as much agreeableness as it was possible to retain in the troublesome position in which I found myself placed, I took a last adieu of that charming society about nine o'clock at night, in order to return to the Chateau of the Chevalier Gordon, and our tears were reciprocal and abundant. I passed the night without going to bed, in order to converse with Mrs. Menzies, not without fear of a visit from some detachment sent in pursuit of the Chevalier Gordon, and the mistake would not have been to my advantage. After a great many reasonings with this lady upon the part which I ought to take, I at length finally decided to gain the low country, to endeavour, as much as I possibly could, to approach Edinburgh, to obtain succours from my parents and my friends, not knowing any person in the Highlands but those who were placed in the same embarrassment as myself, or to perish in the attempt; to regard myself from henceforward as a lost man, who had a thousand chances to one to perish upon the scaffold, but who might have one chance in my favour; to resign myself entirely to Providence, and to commit myself to mere hazard, than to any other resource; to preserve, always, my sans froid and presence of mind, as absolutely necessary to grapple with the troubles and encounters which I might have to meet with, and to profit by the favourable opportunities that might present Behold what were my resolute and decided conclusions to put them into execution, and to think of nothing that could in any way divert me from this plan. Menzies did her utmost possible to turn me from it, by representing to me the insurmountable difficulties at every step;

the pea with of t selv pur bur, arm pass their examples.

adva mor Gor which from dom wher Mr. that infor could his n frank serva of a befor their emba lacke in the and

heard

s and
scafrue, I
than

Duff,

retain ced, I 'clock evalier nt. I nverse some nd the fter a $_{
m hich}$ ${f I}$ ne low ild, to parents hlands ent as f from

idence,
other
ence of
roubles
and to
present
decided
f noth-

nces to

ve one

Mrs.
reprey step;

the counties to traverse, where the fanatical Calvinistic peasants assembled in troops, of those even to form patrols, with their pastors at their heads, in order to make prisoners of the unfortunate gentlemen who endeavoured to save themselves in the mountainous districts of the country from the pursuit of the troops; the great distance it was from Edinburgh, and the impossibility of being able to cross the two arms of the sea (see the Plan, Vol. I., page 8), without a passport from Government, where the English cavalry made their continual patrols along the banks and in the villages, to examine and arrest all whom they suspected without a passport. But nothing could turn me from my resolutions to advance towards the south.

I took leave of Madame Menzies at five o'clock in the morning; she gave me a letter of recommendation to Mr. Gordon, of Kildrummy, one of her relations, whose house, which he then inhabited, was at the distance of twelve miles from that of Mr. Gordon, of Park; and she gave me a domestic to conduct me thither, whom I sent back immediately when we were in sight of his house. I asked at a servant of Mr. Gordon's if his master was at home? He answered me that he was gone out, but would be back to dinner; and he informed me, with a tone of indifference, that if I was cold I could enter the kitchen to warm myself, while waiting for his master's return. I accepted the offer, for he made it very frankly, and I entered the kitchen, where a great number of servants assembled around the fire, who believing themselves of a class much above me, left me for a long time at a side, before proposing to me to sit down, or to permit me to join their company, which I approached very respectfully. They embarrassed me much by their continual questioning; one lackey demanded of me if it was a long time since I had been in the service of Madame Menzies? I replied with a humble and submissive air that it was not above two months. heard, at the same time, a chambermaid, who whispered in the ear of a lackey, but loud enough that I could hear her, that Madame Menzies ought to have been ashamed to have sent a domestic with her commission for his master so ill clad. Their jargon, tomfooleries, and impertinences annoyed me to death, and made me impatient during two hours, when, for my deliverance, Mr. Gordon arrived. I delivered to him the letter of Madame Menzies in presence of his servants, following him constantly, even to his apartment, and immediately when I saw myself alone with him I told him who I was, and beseeched him to give me a guide to conduct me as far as the first arm of the sea, not being acquainted with the He seemed penetrated with my situation, and country. showed all possible civilities; and sent, upon the instant, a servant with an order to one of his gamekeepers to furnish me with a guide as far as the estate of Kildrummy, which is six miles from that; and in waiting for the return of his servant, he found means to cause be brought in to me under cover a dinner, of which I ate heartily, without feeling an appetite, but for precaution, not knowing if I should find any supper at Kildrummy. The guide having arrived, I took leave of Mr. Gordon, and I arrived at an early hour at Kildrummy, a village greatly celebrated for one of the most memorable episodes in the history of Scotland, where I stopped to pass the night.

The Scotch had been in alliance with France during nearly nine hundred years without interruption, since Charlemagne, till the union of the crowns of Scotland and England, without having ever varied in their treaties, offensive and defensive, but the Scotch were generally the victims from their attachment to that kingdom. In all the quarrels of France with England, the Scotch began hostilities, France availing itself of the services of Scotland to make a diversion on the side of England, and to keep the English in check,—a manucevre which France always played, and of which the Scotch were continually the dupes; for the moment the

Eng in S owr OWI ture beer man bein Scot the : in th bein Rob shati their petu put t defea abou to m helie brilli. myse disco ved i this o and r

night
I repe
fort v
my la

*It thousan · her,

have

so ill

oved

vhen,

him

rants,

edia-

was,

as far

h the

and

ant, a

ırnish

ich is

of his

under

ng an

d any

took

t Kil-

most

ere I

during

since

id and offen-

ictims

arrels

France version

eck,—

nt the

English made a descent upon France, the French auxiliaries in Scotland were recalled immediately for the defence of their own country, and these unfortunate Scotch were left to their own forces to free themselves from the mischievous adventure in the best way they could; and England having always been much more populous than Scotland, the Scotch were many times reduced to the lowest abyss, their valour not being always able to supply the want of numbers. Scotch after the loss of many battles on end, having lost all the Lowlands of Scotland, as far as Kildrummy, were shut up in the Highlands, the difficult access whereof saved them from being entirely subdued. In that deplorable condition, Robert the Bruce, having re-assembled six thousand men, the shattered remains of the Scottish armies, placed himself at their head, and, at Kildrummy, fell unexpectedly with impetuous force upon the English army, who were immediately put to flight, without one escaping to carry the news of their defeat, and Scotland saw itself entirely liberated.* I walked about a great deal at Kildrummy, recalling this trait of history to my imagination, and filling it therewith so totally that I believe I could distinguish even the field of battle where this brilliant victory had been gained over the English. I said to myself, "Ah! if this earth could open itself, how would it discover there the bones of the English which it had preserved in its bosom as precious deposits." In fine, the sight of this celebrated place solaced me, elevated my heart a little, and made me feel for the moment my pains assuaged and suspended, and my torments of mind abated.

As there were but few inns at Kildrummy, I passed the night in what bore the name of the "Public House," where I reposed myself upon a bed of straw, much to my discomfort with an enormous number of fleas; but in recompense my landlady gave me for supper an excellent young fowl,

^{*}It is reported that the English army then in Scotland amounted to ten thousand men, but it is more likely that the number is exaggerated.

in

br

th

th

 \mathbf{I}

m

Al

pa

his

ma

his

he

and

his

one

his

nig

hoi

cha

atio

not

not

the

cou

as t

!po

of A

not

verse

ever Chur

cal ra

punis

wicke

and she surprised me next morning in demanding from me but three halfpence, (six halfpence of France), for my supper and bed. It is true this was a hotel very extraordinary. where they had no need of any hard cash. This event gave me pleasure, seeing, at least, I should not have hunger and misery to combat with as I had had in the Highlands. Gordon had sent an order to Kildrummy to furnish me with a guide as far north as Cortachy, a village belonging to Lord Ogilvie, at the foot of the mountains, which I had walked along the sides of since my departure from Banff. Before my departure from Kildrummy, I made them roast another fowl, which I put into my pocket by way of precaution, uncertain if I should find anything to eat in my journey; and in giving mine hostess a piece of twelve halfpence, she was as content as I was. These good people know little about money, and in effect they have no need of it, having in abundance the necessaries of life.

As soon as my guide had put me into the way to Cortachy, without the possibility of deceiving me, I sent him back, and I arrived at Cortachy in the evening. I wished, with all my heart, in crossing the country of Glen Lyon to meet there the minister of that parish, a sanguinary villain, who made daily patrols through that country with a pistol concealed under his coat, which he presented at the head of our unfortunate gentlemen to make them prisoners. This iniquitous minister of the Word of God, regarded as a saint, attempted to make every one perish on the scaffold.* Mr. Menzies had forewarned me to be upon my guard against him, but I did not fear him, having always my English pistols

^{*}I have seen, says the author of Giphantie, people who adore the same God, who sacrifice at the same altar, who preach to the people the spirit of peace and sweetness; I have seen them engage in questions the most unintelligible, and immediately hate them, persecute them, and mutually destroy one another. O God! what will become of men if they don't find in Theo more goodness than is found in those of weakness and of folly? Cease to be victims of misguided zeal, adore God, keep silence, and live in peace.

in a most perfect state, loaded and primed, one in each breeches' pocket. I desired, on the contrary, to find him, for the benefit of my comrades in misfortune, being well assured that I would not have had any difficulty to fight with him at pistols, for a man harsh, barbarous, and cruel is never brave; I have remarked this all my life; but the punishment of this monster in human form was reserved for Mr. Gordon of e with Abachie. When we were separated four days, after our deging to parture from Rothiemurchus, Abachie took the post to go to I had his Castle; and the minister of Glen Lyon having had infor-Banff. mation of this, placed himself at the head of a detachment of n roast his armed parishioners, true disciples of such a pastor, whom precauhe conducted to the Castle of Abachie, to make him prisoner: y jourand he had only time to save himself through the window, in fpence, his shirt. As one hardly ever pardons an attempt made upon w little one's life by treachery, Mr. Gordon assembled a dozen of wing in his vassals,-some days after departed with them in the night for Glen Lyon, and found means to enter into the house of the fanatical minister, having gone up into the chamber where he slept. They subjected him to an operation too horrible to relate, which may be conceived but cannot be described, assuring him at the same time that if he did not make these infernal patrols of his parishioners to cease, they would cause a second visit cost him his life. None head of could in the smallest degree lament this adventure but one; This as to himself, his chastisement was not so tragical as death a saint, pon the scaffold, which he wished to prepare for Mr. Gordon * Mr. of Abachie. It is believed that he was sufficiently corrected

> *The Editor has endeavoured to put the misdeeds of this miscreant into verse in the following lines, which he hopes his readers will appreciate, however feeble the execution. The disgraceful conduct of a Minister of the Church of Scotland prostituting his sacred office to the purposes of political rapine and revenge, can never be sufficiently reprobated, nor too severely punished. Hap; y it is that there are but few examples of such violence and wickedness, and none in the present day.

not to follow any more his inhuman courses.*

om me supper dinary, t gave er and ls. M.

to Corent him wished, Lyon to villain, a pistol

against pistols

the same spirit of ost uniuy destroy in Thee Cease n peace.

As the greater part of the vassals of my Lord Ogilvie were with him in the army of Prince Edward, I risked no-

The Parson of Glen Lyon.

How shall the Muse relate the tale, Might make the stoutest heart to quail? It is not of arms or murder dire, Or sacked towns where hosts expire; But one which covers us with shame-A deed so dark we dare not name. A fiend in human flesh, they say Might well lament the fatal day; But some say he uttered neither tear nor groan, Nor made his tongue to guilt atone; But others tell a different tale, And say he spoke of heaven and hell. Not fit for poinard, sword, or rack, Rampant he rode through moors and mire, Without one touch of manly fire. Nor he alone ;—a bloody train Of parish folks-fanatic men, Whose souls he trained to deeds of strife, Instead of leading them in walks of life; A sad perversion of his honoured place, Omen evil to the rising race. And what dire design but death, Could bring him armed upon the heath With numerous crowds of followers in his train, To catch those called rebellious men. Among those whose rank was high Stood Gordon, chivalrous Chief of Abachie. The monster parson of the glen Surrounds his house with Highland men, To catch him as in peace he lay, To take him prisoner, or to slay Within his castle gates of Cortachy. So sudden was the onslaught dire, It seemed like gleams of liquid fire; Its success, had they done the deed, Must have cost the Chief his head. And made another to be + \ld Had stained with blood the scaffold. As it was, he just had time To save his neck or break his spine.

thing Cort tage medi Pros small pass way

peasa

half a

told

office

"The

gilvie nothing in addressing myself to the first house I should come to at Cortachy, having informed the landlady on entering the cottage that I was one of the Prince's army.* She told me immediately that there were two gentlemen concealed in Glen Prosene, a great ravine between two hills, where there runs a small rivulet, which was at the foot of the mountains,—a pass altogether picturesque and greatly secluded. I took my way immediately, following her directions to the house of a peasant named Samuel, quite at the top of the ravine, about half a league from Cortachy, where I found them as she had told me. They were Messrs. Brown and Gordon, the two officers in the service of France who had escaped from the

*The vassals in Scotland always followed the side which their chief took, whether it were for the House of Stuart or for that of Hanover.

No sooner was the alarm but given, Than he from off his bed had risen; Then almost naked to the road, Where beasts of burden only trode, Out at the window took his flight, To meet the darkness of the night,-Without his stockings or his shoes, Or time his vassals to arouse. There's not a man whose heart can feel For public or for private weal, But must detest all treacherous arts, However well the traitors act their parts; And wonder not if vengeance due The guilty traitor should pursue. So in this case, as will be seen, 'Twas neither low-nor could be mean. To make the monster dearly rue, With retribution justly due, The dastardly attempt he made To endanger Gordon's precious head. Not many more than ten good days, Or nights that sparkled in the moon's pale rays, Than he whose life had been thus ensuared By traitors vile, who thus had dared, With vassals few, but manly stride Along the mountainous passes, ride

city of Carlisle in England after its capitulation, who were very glad to see me again. They advised me strongly not to go farther to the south, where I would inevitably expose myself to be captured, because they knew positively that all the towns and villages upon the coast of the chief arm of the sea were visited at every instant with all the vigilance and exactness possible, by patrols of cavalry, who rode continually along the coast, and who examined with the greatest rigour and severity all passengers. They added that it was their design, of trying to go to Edinburgh; but from this they desisted, seeing the impossibility of reaching it, and they named to me many of our comrades who had been made prisoners within a few days by endeavouring to effect a passage at the chief arm of the sea, which is about eight miles

To the Parson's manse, surround the door With dagger, dirk, and bright claymore, Determined to avenge the traitor's deed, That had imperill'd this Gordon's head. Aloft into the bedroom floor They mount, and shut the creaking door; And such a scene we shall not tell, As there the sanguinary man befell; Blood enough he got full sore, That made him wince, and howl, and roar. It needs not words his fate to tell. Nor what the loss he must bewail. The tender virgins heard his cry, His wife bemoaned with many a sigh. The men they stript him to the skin, And saw his legs were very thin; He cried for mercy at their hands. They said-"Dismiss your bloody bands; For if we come again to use the knife, Depend it then shall cost your life." It is not oft such deeds are heard, Nor have been known since days of Abelard. The moral of this tale is such-That zeal should ne'er be over much; Nor short-lived man betray his friend. But always helpless innocence defend.

fro vie soje eve wis tion erro lowe

 $\mathbf{W}_{\mathbf{e}}$ the s their but t the r oat I water boil 1 this w upon per. appea health had at Corta bitant: doubt some (detach some (prison known in sun

their o

were u

vere

ot to

my-

l the

e sea

xact-

ually

igour

their

they

they

made

pas-

miles

from Cortachy; they beseeched me with these instances in view not to be obstinate, and to adopt, as they had done, the sojourn of Glen Prosene, at the house of Samuel. With every desire that I had to approach Edinburgh, I did not wish to precipitate myself to perdition by rashness, my situation being then so critical that the least false step from an error of judgment was sure to cost me my life. Thus I followed their advice, and consented without wavering to remain with them at the house of Samuel.

Samuel was a very honest man, but excessively poor. We dwelt at his house during seven days, and partook of the same cheer with him and his family, who had nothing for their entire nourishment but oatmeal, and no other beverage but the pure water of the river which runs in the middle of the ravine. We breakfasted in the morning with a morsel of oat bread, and not to choke ourselves, we drank a cup of water, which made it pass over. For dinner we caused boil this meal with water till it became thick, and we ate this with horn spoons; at night we turned the boiling water upon this mess into an earthen pan, and this was our supper. I confess that the time I passed under this nourishment appeared long, although we all held out well, without our health being in the least degree affected. We could have had an addition to our bad cheer by sending to bring it from Cortachy; but we durst not risk that for fear that the inhabitants who knew the ordinary fare of Samuel would not doubt but that he had people concealed in his house; and that some evil intended person would not fail to inform the first detachment of cavalry, whom they might find at Cortachy, some of whom were there very often, to come to make us Poor Samuel and his family, -never having known any other meat during the whole year, unless, perhaps, in summer, that they might have a little milk to mix with their oatmeal in place of water,—by their mode of living they were under the shelter of fortune, not fearing diseases which might deprive them of their meagre fare, but to which they might be less subject by that frugal and simple nourishment, which would not produce so much humour in the body as in those who lived in luxury; and as they confined the necessaries of life to a very small limit, they were certain to find what was sufficient wherewithal to furnish their subsistence and support by their labour; besides, they enjoyed a health perfect and unknown to people brought up in abundance and ease.* Their desires were confined to the preservation of their existence and their well-being, without ambition to depart from the state where nature had placed them, not even to ameliorate their lot; content with what they possessed, they wished nothing more; living without care, sleeping without inquietude, and dying without fear.† One should call

*It is in the nature of man to seek out the means of his happiness, that he should be as happy as it is possible for him to be—subsistence for the present, and if he will think it, for the future, hope and certainty of this first boon. It is not necessary but to believe that we are happy to be so. It is this belief that makes part of our felicity. He who believes himself unfortunate becomes so.

†The ordinary state of the human mind is a species of delirium. The soul is unceasingly agitated by a strange succession of vague thoughts and contrary passions. Man cannot be happy but by retrenching, not only his actions, but his useless thoughts. Says an author-We do not mistake ourselves, however, by this indolence. The calculations of nature are much greater than ours, guarding us from slandering her too largely. She leaves to the cares and passions of men the distribution of riches, but that of happiness is retained in her own hands. She has no food for variety of dishes, and delicacy of best meats; she has not put in common all the pleasures which she chooses to distribute to the human race; she has given too much empire to the potentates of the earth. They can by their concurrence reduce man by labour to have nothing for his recompense but pain, they cannot elevate him; neither his returning wants which give a sauce to the most simple nourishment, nor that burning thirst which pants with pleasure after the fountain, nor the sleep which refreshes sweetly his wearied frame, nor the spectacle of nature which rejoices him at sunwake, nor the emotion which distracts him, nor that curiosity which agitates him, nor that blood which thrills deliciously through his senses, nor that hope, in short, which gilds the future, sweetens the present, and excites courage. All these pleasures of life are not in the powers of civilized possessors; it is the boon of the poor as well as the rich.

whi thos mad able mean requ to th for n by th thing and e only by b wants gradu Samu multir that th is one It is turnin our m difficul detach in our dwelt

ther

*Cert
theless, a
little pa
ness, and
ferior to
cannot su
helplessn
advantag
a pleasin

them happy-if happiness consists in exemption from painswhich follow imaginary wants; and the remembrance of those good people, of whose felicity I was often envious, made me always think that three-fourths of men are miserable by their own proper faults, having in their power the means of being happy, if they would choose to regulate their requirements according to their incomes, every one according to the means which he possesses. The absolute necessaries for man are food and raiment; but what they mean ordinarily by the necessaries of life does not consist but of superfluous things, no ways essential to the preservation of their health and existence—on the contrary, often prejudicial, and which only serve to shorten their days. No one can be happy but by being contented with his lot, and proportioning his wants to his resources; that is what all might be able to do gradually, even reducing themselves to the condition of Samuel; disenthroning ambition and avarice, as flies which multiply-without ceasing our imaginary wants-in such sort, that the more one acquires of honours and riches, the more is one insatiable and never happy. Happy mediocrity, verily! It is often in one's own bosom that one finds happiness, turning by necessity of spirit from cloying pleasures.* Besides our meagre cheer, to which I had at first much pain and difficulty in accustoming myself, we were often disturbed by detachments of English cavalry, who made frequent patrols in our neighbourhood. Samuel had a married daughter who dwelt at the entry of the ravine, and she served us as an

*Certainly, says Herodotus, there are a great many rich men who, nevertheless, are not happy; and there are a great many that are happy with but little patrirrony. The rich man has many ways of satisfying his covetousness, and of bearing great losses. But granted that the other, though inferior to him in two things, he surpasses him, nevertheless, in this that he cannot suffer great losses, or be subject to those covetous desires; and this helplessness itself, which seems to be a disgrace of fortune, is for him an advantage and a favour. He enjoys health, he has virtuous children, he has a pleasing countenance, he has an elegant deportment.

hey ent, s in cesfind

and n of deeven essed,

with-

alth

s, that for the of this o be so. himself

. The hts and only his ke oure much e leaves that of riety of all the as given concurat pain, sauce to ats with etly his unwake, tes him, hope, in courage.

ers; it is

advanced sentinel, to apprize us when there were any detachments of the English at Cortachy, and who tranquilized us during the day, our sentineless being very exact to inform us of all that passed there; but when the troops arrived at the beginning of the night, we were obliged to seek our security by saving ourselves in the neighbouring mountains, where we often passed the night in the open air, even in frightful storms of rain and wind.

Our sentineless, always attentive and alert, came to inform us that there were a great many detachments who scoured round our quarters, and that they had made prisoners of Sir James Kinloch, his brothers, and many other persons who were found with them in his castle, and that M. Ker, a colonel in the service of Spain, aide-de-camp to Prince Edward, had also been captured about four miles from us, at the side of the little town of Forfar. She added that one detachment had searched through all the castles and environs of Cortachy in the hope of finding there my Lord Ogilvie, who was then not far from us without our suspecting it. According to what his Lordship has said to me since, that the same detachment had information of our retreat in the Glen Prosene, on account of these detachments which flew continually around us, we were all unanimously of opinion to take our departure from Samuel's house the next day at three o'clock in the morning to return to the mountains, and fix for some time our residence among the rocks, having no other course to take. In consequence of our resolution, we went to bed at eight o'clock, in order to make at least one provision of sleep at parting, not being able to hope to have the benefit of sleeping under roofs for some time.

I have never been credulous in regard to supernatural stories, which people listen to in all countries, and with which they delude men from their infancy—the products of brains disordered by superstitions of old women or fools; but I had this night a dream so extraordinarily incomprehensible

tha as to mu not upo my bey secu fort and Edin of t pene of al and myse peris that balm o'cloc upon Doug sense perier had c All t agina was f able. saved

abyss

elbow

circur

dream

that if any other had told it me I would have treated him as a visionary; nevertheless, it was in the end so verified to the letter, and I owed to it my life in having been so much struck with it that, all incredulous as I had been, I was not able to refuse to follow the impressions which it had left upon me. I dreamed that, escaping from the pursuit of my enemies, rejoicing with entire satisfaction to see myself beyond all dangers, and in a situation of the most perfect security, with the soul serene and tranquil, in short the most fortunate of men, having escaped perishing on the scaffold, and being at an end of all my pains and sufferings, I was at Edinburgh, in company with my Lady Jean Douglas, sister of the Duke of Douglas, relating to her all that had happened to me since the battle of Culloden, giving her a detail of all that regarded our army, since our retreat from Stirling, and finally the risks which I had run personally for saving myself, the idea of which, always presented to my mind of perishing on the scaffold, had pursued me without ceasing till that happy moment, which turned in my soul the salutary balm of the sweetest tranquility. On awakening at six o'clock in the morning this dream left an impression so strong upon my mind that the sweet voice of my Lady Jean Douglas appeared to me still sounding in my ears; all my senses were in a profound calm, at the same time that I experienced a serenity of soul and a tranquility of mind which I had ceased to know since the fatal epoch of our misfortunes. All the particulars of my dream were presented to my imagination, and engraved deeply in my memory; and my soul was for a long time in this flattering state, sweet and agreeable, where my dream had placed it by the thought of being I rested in my bed distracted and plunged in an abyss of reflection, my head placed on my hand, and my elbow leaning on the pillow of my bed, recapitulating all the circumstances of my dream, regretting that it was but a dream, but wishing to have often such to calm the storms and

l us
n us
t the
urity
e we
thtful

o in-

who

ich-

oners rsons er, a rince us, at t one virons gilvie, ng it. that in the n flew ion to three fix for other e went

natural which brains but I tensible

ovision

benefit

agitations by which my soul was devoured by the uncertainty of my lot. What could be more cruel than to be continually fluctuating between hope and despair, a thousand times worse than death itself; for the certainty of a suffering visibly unavoidable makes one adopt his course with resolution and resignation. Having passed an hour in this attitude, immoveable as a statue, Samuel entered my chamber. He told me that my companions had gone at three c'clock in the morning, and pointed out to me at the same time the road in the mountains where I would find them. He added that he had been twice at my bed to awaken me before their departure, but finding me buried in a deep sleep, he had felt regret to awaken me, knowing the need I had of repose to fortify me at the commencement against the fatigues which I was about to undergo in the mountains; he told me to be quick in rising, it being time to depart, for fear lest his daughter, believing that we had all left his house, might not be so exact of advertising, if there appeared any detachments. I answered him in a soft and serious tone-"Samuel, I am going to Edinburgh." Poor Samuel immediately opened his large eyes, and with an air sheepish and stupefied answering me-"My good sir, excuse me, your head is turned." "No," said I to him, "Samuel, my head is not turned; I am going to Edinburgh, and I shall depart from here this evening. Go tell your daughter on the instant that I am still at your house, that she may continue her outlook, as usual, and inform me the moment that there are any detachments, in case they should come to Cortachy throughout the day." Samuel commenced to annoy me with his remonstrances; but I imposed silence upon him, and I replied to him once for all that it was decided, and not to speak to me any more of it.

Never did a day appear to me so long. I was left to myself all the time to continual reflections between impatience and fear of seeing the night arrive. The detachments of soldiers, the fanatical peasants—still more dismal than the

sold full per dre sea. min frig me to . I er one I sh tain if s amo frier I ar with I sh ing they take my l

tient
who
about
far, i
inha
tribut
warn

town

wish

sion,

ainty

ually

worse

y un-

n and

noveld me

ning,

noun-

been

, but

et to

fy me

about

ising,

leving

dver-

im in

irgh."

ith an

d sir.

him,

ourgh,

your

at she

e the

hould

enced

ilence

is de-

o my-

tience

nts of

n the

soldiers—even the towns and the villages to go through are full of these Calvinistic enemies of the House of Stuart, the peril to which I should be obliged to expose myself in addressing myself to the boatmen for passing the arms of the sea, in short a thousand black ideas came to crowd upon my mind, the dangers always thickening in enlargement, and the frightful difficulties which it was necessary to surmount made me tremble, but did not shake me in my resolution of going to Edinburgh or to perish in the execution of the attempt. I ended always in replying to myself as if there were some one with whom I was holding converse—"Very well, I shall perish, whether in going to the south or to the mountains, it is all the same, and it is a risk throughout all; but, if so I get to Edinburgh, I shall be more in safety than among the mountains, where I have neither parents nor friends, and where my acquaintances are but of recent date. I am ready! Very well; my fate will be promptly decided without languishing a long time overwhelmed with misery, as I should be in the mountains, and after that, perhaps, finishing my days on the scaffold." These were my reasonings; they found but small argument favourable to the course I had taken to go South, for all appearances were against me; but my head was full of the dream, and if the whole earth had wished me to turn back, they would have made no impression, nor have prevailed ought upon me.

At last the night arrived, which I had waited for impatiently. I mounted on horseback, with Samuel behind me, who consented to be my guide as far as the first arm of the sea, about eight miles from Cortachy, and we left Samuel's house about ten o'clock at night. There is a small town named Forfar, most renowned for its Presbyterian fanaticism, and whose inhabitants have signalized latterly their holy zeal by contributing to make Colonel Ker prisoner. Samuel had forewarned me that it was necessary to pass through this infernal town, not having any other road which conducted to

Broughty, a village on the border of the first arm of the sea, or abandoning the great routes to pass it; so I departed late from the house of Samuel, in order to pass through this execrable town during the time that these unworthy inhabitants were sunk in their most profound sleep. At the moment that we entered into this abominable hole a dog barked and terrified poor Samuel, who was a very honest good man, but very timorous, and naturally an excessive poltroon. with a terrible panic he became like a fool, and wished b main force to throw himself under the horse to fly from it. I caught hold of the skirt of his garment, and tied it under the horse in spite of all his efforts to disengage it, fearing that the fright he had received had turned his head altogether. I would not suffer him to fly (although in the best possible disposition, in cold blood, to serve me), and to leave me in the most cruel embarrassment, for I did not know the country, and I should never have been able alone to find the road to return to Cortachy without being obliged to ask from village to village, in exposing myself to be made prisoner by this rabble. He wriggled himself about continually, as threw himself on to the ground, but I prevented him from unloosing himself from off the saddle by the hold which I had of his dress with my right hand. I exhorted him to be calm, I scolded him, I prayed him, I threatened him, but always without any effect; his head was no longer his own. I was pleased to say to him, "But, Samuel, it is but a dog that's barking;" he heard nothing that I could say to him. He was not possessed of himself; he poured out great drops, and trembled like one in a fever. Fortunately, I had an The day after the battle of Culloden, being excellent horse. opposite the Castle of Macpherson of Cluny, Rose, which had saved me from the battle, was ready to tumble under me, not being able longer to sustain himself on his legs, I met my Lady Macpherson on the high road, when she told me that there were seven or eight persons who had left their horses

hors fast on I havi brea sand he

migh

horselong the neighborse hang to the hang to the fields one

havin of Sansw have Forfa place this

taker

We l

anim

e sea.

late

this

habi-

ment

d and

n, but

Seizer

ed b

om it.

under

g that

er. I

le dis-

in the

untry.

road

from

er by

from

hich I

to be

n, but

own.

a dog

b him.

drops,

ad an

being

h had

ie, not

et my

e that

horses

, ai

near to that to save themselves on foot in the mountains; and that I could take one of the best of them. I set spurs to my horse, and passed through the town at full speed, to leave as fast as it was possible this troublesome crisis, always holding on by his dress, and as soon as we were beyond it (no one having turned out of his house), poor Samuel began to breathe again. Having come to himself he made me a thousand apologies for his terror, and promised upon his word that he would never again behave in that manner come what might.

When the day began to appear, I dismounted from the horse, which I offered in a present to Samuel, not being able longer to keep him on account of the passage of the arm of the sea. But Samuel would not take him, saying that his neighbours, seeing him in possession of a fine horse, would immediately suspect that he had harboured some rebel, whom he had aided to save himself, and that they would immediately inform the judges, who would indict him; and the horse being a proof against him, they would condem him to be hanged. I took off the saddle and bridle, which we threw to the bottom of a pool; and we drove the horse into the fields at a little distance from the high road, in order that any one who might find him might take him for a stray horse. We had much difficulty in putting at a distance from us this animal, which followed us for some time like a dog.

We had marched only about a quarter of an hour after having set the horse at liberty, when we encountered a friend of Samuel's, who questioned him hardly to know where he was going, what he was going to do, and who I was. Samuel answered him, without becoming excited, what I could have little expected of him since the adventure of the dog at Forfar, that he was going to look after a calf which he had placed last autumn for wintering in the low country; as to this young man whom you see, as he had no bread, I have taken him out of charity, and he serves me for his meat. I

am going to send him back again to my house with the calf, while I shall go to Dundee to buy a cow, which will serve to provide my family during the summer. There was a publichouse near to that, where the two friends adjourned to drink a bottle of beer together, and it was necessary that I should go on with them there. I always showed so much respect for my new master, that I would not even sit down beside him till he told me to sit down. Samuel's friend insisted greatly on me to drink a cup of that small beer, which had exactly the taste of a medicine; but Samuel exempted me from it, making such a great eulogy of my sobriety and good character, that his friend paid me without ceasing a thousand little attentions; wishing from time to time to get a youth like me for the same wages; and I believe I was able to discover some small desire to detach me from the service of Samuel, to enter into his own. After having emptied some pots of beer, they left the inn and separated, affording me infinite pleasure; for not only was I very much embarrassed to act the part which Samuel had given me to play, but their foolish jargon annoyed Scarcely had this man left us than Samuel whispered in my ear that he was one of the greatest knaves and cheats in the whole province, and greatly renowned for his roguish tricks. Had he known who I was I would have been immediately sold; and the sole temptation of having my wealth and purse would have been enough to betray me, and conduct me into the hands of the police. I was so much astonished at what Samuel told me that I believed then in good truth they were bound together in friendship, which their conversation, full of mutual expressions of esteem, left me not room to doubt. I praised much the prudence and discretion of my new master on this occasion.

We do not ordinarily attribute, except to the courts of Princes, deceit, hypocrisy, and the art of deceiving—named, mal a propos policy—as the only schools for learning false-hood and dissimulation; and all men, although masked, know

the ow see con dri Ιw of oth woi who bee othe thir one but was call play repl hom two gene play simi

Ogilv

"is f
and i

simp

gene

gestu manu is not but w e calf,

rve to

ublic-

drink

should

ect for

im till

tly on

ly the

aking

r, that

atten-

ae for

some

enter

, they

e; for

which

noyed

amuel

naves

ed for

have

ng my

e, and

much

hen in

their

ne not

retion

rts of

amed,

false-

know

themselves to a certain degree by that which animates their own interests; and measuring others after themselves, they see and judge all that they are in effect; but I saw quite as much finesse in the false appearances of friendship and compliments of these two peasants, during the time they were drinking their beer; and I was as much their dupe in full as I was in an interview at which I was present with two Lords of high rank; one of them was one of my best friends, the other Ambassador to a court where he had promised and would have been able to have rendered a service to my friend, who was prescribed and exiled from his country, if he had been well disposed to it. These two persons embraced each other with an air of cordiality, saying a thousand flattering things to one another, and gave themselves mutually all that one could imagine of the strongest assurances of friendship; but the moment M. the Ambassador had finished his visit, and was gone, my friend made me aware that they both reciprocally detested one another. I reproached him for having played a part so unworthy of an honest and gallant man. He replied that it was for the purpose of paying the ambassador home in his own coin.† The pantomime, nevertheless, of these two Lords would have deceived me less easily, through the idea generally entertained of the duplicity of courtiers, than that played by these two peasants, shown by the falsehood and dissimulation of the one, and the artfulness of the other, but a simple natural rustic. Falsehood is in the hearts of men in general, irrespectively of their rank in the world!—depravity

*M. Le Duc de Mirepoix, then ambassador at London, and my Lord Ogilvie, now Earl of Airlie.

t"To what a degree our politeness," says an author of the year 1448, "is false and trifling, as that which makes a parade of itself—great, odious, and insulting. It is a mask much more hideous than the most deformed visage. All these bowings and scrapings, these affectations, and these other gestures, are insupportable to an honest man. The false brilliancy of our manners is more detestable than the coarseness of many more rustic, which is not so revolting."—Page 367. Through all, one sees the baseness of man; but where is his grandeur?—to be vile in his opinions, edious in his passions.

of sentiments which we do not find in the animal races; for a dog will not caress when he wishes to bite; these evil qualities are reserved alone for the human race. Lying causes man to depart from his natural state, dishonours him, debases him, degrades him below the brutes; and, unfortunately, one finds it indiscriminately in the heart of one born to govern a kingdom as well as in that of a peasant.

Having arrived about nine o'clock in the morning a distance of about half a league from the first arm of the sea, without knowing how I would have passed it, to whom I could address myself to find assistance, nor where to find an asylum in waiting for an opportunity presenting itself to cross the Firth, I demanded of Samuel if he could not point out to me some gentleman in the neighbourhood of Broughty who was not an enemy to the House of Stuart, but in the meantime had not joined our army. "On my troth," replied Samuel, "behold the castle of M. Graham of Dinnetrune, who answers precisely to what you define, two of whose nephews were in your army, but he has remained quiet at home without declaring himself." I had not known M. Graham, having never seen him; but I had often heard him spoken of by my sister Rollo, his niece having been companion to my Lady Rollo, her mother-in-law. M. Graham was of a very ancient family, a branch of the Grahams, Duke of Montrose, and was one of those who had taken arms in favour of the House of Stuart in 1715. Having then but small means after that unfortunate adventure, he got into the service of the English East India Company, and rising to the command of one of their ships, he acquired a considerable fortune, and again raised his family. I sent Samuel on the instant to inform M. Graham that he had conducted close to his mansion an unfortunate gentleman who desired exceedingly to speak with him. Samuel did not delay returning, telling me that he had found M. Graham, who had ordered him to conduct me to one of his enclosures, where there were

Gra pray Firt fron he ' coul to b seen after of n who send same after with I sho and a and sure) wine vorac much into his a to se the o in th Havi which

amon

hour,

annot

boatn

their

very

for a alities an to him, finds king-

a dise sea, om I find elf to point ughty n the eplied , who hews withtham, ooken ion to of a Monour of \mathbf{small} e sero the rable n the ose to ceed-

ning,

dered

were

very high furze, and that he would not delay to join me. M. Graham arrived immediately. I told him who I was, and prayed him most instantly to procure me a boat to pass the Firth at Broughty, as this village was not above half-a-league from his house. I addressed myself to him, persuaded that he would certainly know all the inhabitants in whom one could confide. He replied that he would be greatly delighted to be able to be of use; that he knew my sister Rollo, having seen her for a short time at the Castle of Lord Rollo; and after a thousand apologies for not being able to run the risk of making me enter into his Castle (fearing his servants, of whose fidelity he was not certain), he told me that he would send forthwith to Broughty to find a boat, asking me at the same time if I would not wish to breakfast. I told him, that after having passed six or seven days at the house of Samuel, with nothing to live upon but oatmeal and water for our food, I should find very good whatever he should judge proper, and should do honours to it by my appetite. He went away, and sent me at once his gardener (of whose fidelity he was sure), with fresh eggs, butter, cheese, a bottle of white wine, and another of beer. Never did I eat with so much voracity! I devoured seven or eight eggs in a moment, with much butter, and bread, and cheese. M. Graham returned into the park, but seeing me drowsy, he left me, reiterating his assurances that he would send immediately to Broughty to secure boatmen to transport me that night in a boat to the other side of the Firth. It was then nearly ten o'clock in the morning, and fine weather in the month of May. Having sent back Samuel very well pleased by a gratuity which I made him far above his expectations, I laid me down among the broom, which was five feet high, and I slept an hour, when I was awakened most agreeably by M. Graham announcing to me the good news that he had engaged the boatmen, who were assembled to take me across the Firth in their boat that night at nine o'clock.

wit

ras

or

ver

wh

my

con

emi

stop

in .

retu

emi

emi

the

gui

the

the

pac

der

way

the

state

com

diat

I la

grou

whe

poin

whe

follo

bling

coun

M. Graham asked me what I would wish for dinner, making a detail of the good things in his house, all exquisite for a famished man who had partaken of such meagre fare at the house of Samuel. He mentioned to me a good sirloin of beef, and I begged of him not to send me anything else. Although it was then scarcely three hours since I had eaten copiously, I did not feel myself less strong as I devoured the sirloin, which I found delicious, and of a taste far above all had ever eaten in my life, of the most delicate and refined; in fact, I would have been able to have indulged myself in a repast far more ample, not being able to foresee if I should make an equal one for a long time.*

M. Graham returned immediately after dinner, bringing with him a bottle of old claret wine, which was excellent, and which we emptied together, so that I felt myself in force and in courage to face all difficulties. He made me aware of the arrangements he had adopted, that at five o'clock precisely I should jump over the park wall, at the place which he shewed me, where I would see the gardener with a sack of corn on his back, whom it was necessary to follow at some distance until he should enter into a wind mill; then there would appear an old woman in place of the gardener, that I should follow the same, and who would conduct me to the village of Broughty. M. Graham kept company with me till about four o'clock, when he took leave of me, embraced me, and wished me the luck of saving myself. I regulated my watch by his to be exact at the rendezvous of the gardener.

I had yet a mortal hour to wait in the park, which appeared to me long through my impatience. I held my watch, constantly counting the minutes, and the moment the hand touched five o'clock, I set myself to follow the order of M.

^{[*}Whether everything eaten of the best fare is enjoyment, or whether of every thing superabounding, the pleasure is but satiated; one has always a feeling for the first necessaries; one has it not for worn-out tastes.]

I had no difficulty in discovering the gardener, with the sack of corn on his back; but I was greatly embarrassed to be able to distinguish the old woman among three or four old women who passed before the mill precisely at the very instant that the gardener entered it; and I did not know which of them it behoved me to follow, until my one, seeing my embarrassment, made me a sign of the head, which I comprehended very well. Having arrived at the top of the eminence which descends to the village of Broughty, she stopped to inform me that she would go down herself alone, in order to see if all was ready, and told me to await her return on the highway were she left me.

Broughty is situated on the sea coast, at the foot of an eminence, and one does not see it till one is at the top of this eminence, from which the road descends obliquely to enter the village. The sun began to set when the good woman quitted me; and having waited more than half an-hour on the highway without her having reappeared, impatience at the last made me leave the highway, and enter five or six paces on the laboured land, to approach more nearly the border of the eminence, in order to perceive if she was on the way of coming up again, where I lay down on my belly on the ground in a furrow. I had not been five minutes in this state, to look out for the old woman, till I heard some one coming up, and saw a head appear, which I took immediately for her; but having perceived the head of a horse, I lay down instantly as before, concealing myself on the ground with my head turned to the side of the highway, when I saw pass eight or ten men on horseback at the point which I had just quitted; and they had just only passed when the old woman arrived, quite fluttered as they had followed her close. I rose up, and having approached her, "Ah!" said she to me, in a transport of joy and trembling, as if she had been in a paroxysm of fever, "I never counted upon finding you again." I told her to calm herself

vhether always

ner,

isite

re at

in of

Al-

eaten

d the

re all

ined;

in a

hould

nging

ellent,

force

are of

ecisely

ich he

ack of

tsome

there

r, that

me to

with

e, em-

regu-

of the

h ap-

watch,

hand

of M.

and take breath, not comprehending at first what she wished to say to me; but being a little restored, she endeavoured to explain to me the cause of her alarms. She told me that the men whom I had seen were English dragoons, who came to visit the village with so much severity and threatening that they had affrighted so dreadfully the boatmen whom M. Graham had engaged to ferry me over the Firth, that they would not furthermore undertake to do it. I reproached her a little for her imprudence and rashness for not having made me aware that the dragoons were in the village; for I not only ran a great risk of having been captured by this detachment, if I had not quitted by the merest chance the highway where she had told me to wait for her, but I was tempted at many times, by my impatience at her tardiness in returning, to descend to the village, which I would have done had I known the road to Broughty, or where the public house was, without being obliged to ask from door to door; and I should have been thrown into the mouth of the lion, by the silliness and stupidity of this woman, whose imbecility made me touch closely the scaffold! What a dire position we are in when our life depends upon the conduct of narrow-minded people! answered me, that on entering into the tavern to find the boatmen, she was so overcome by seeing it full of soldiers that she was demented and did not know further what she should do. It was a dreadful disaster for me that the boatmen would not move farther, at the moment when I believed I had half saved myself by the certain passage of the Firth. I beseeched the old woman to conduct me to the tavern where the boatmen were, but she had no desire to return thither, excusing herself upon the uselessness of going there—the boatmen being so terrified at the threatenings of the soldiers, added she, that they would not ferry me over that night for all the gold in the world, and that I had no other course to take but to return to M. Graham's house, who would find means to conceal me till the next day, at night, that the boatmen wo ide upo and diff tain was the dere more old wor would age

hers her Lore shov M. (in the still All noth succ who scaro boats to tin two and natu

I car

alth

ished

ed to

t the

visit had

had

furr her

that

great d not

ltold

y my

o the

ad to

being

been tupi-

osely

r life She

the

diers

t she boat-

eved

here

ther,

boat-

dded

l the e but

is to

men

would be recovered from their fright. I could not endure the idea of retracing my steps, the more especially that, being upon the border of the Firth which had cost me so much anxiety of mind and wishes to arrive at, and which was so difficult to pass, on account of its nearness to the mountainous districts, and detachments of dragoons, who were continually patrolling upon its banks, the reflection that there was no depending for a moment upon the good dispositions of the boatmen to set me free—this unfortunate condition rendered me obstinate, and I hoped to secure them by force of money or persuasion; so I always persevered in assuring the old woman that this was the most favourable opportunity in the world, since the dragoons, not having any trace of rebels, would not return a second time that night to revisit the village. At length she listened to my reasons, and consented, although with some repugnance, to conduct me thither.

On entering into the the tavern, the hostess, who called herself Mrs. Burne, whispered into my ear to fear nothing in her house, and that she had a daughter in our army with my Lord Ogilvie. I regarded this as a very good omen. She showed me immediately the boatmen who had promised to M. Graham to carry me over to the other side of the Firth in their boat. I addressed myself to them, whom I found still trembling and terrified at the threats of the soldiers. All my offers, my prayers, and my entreaties, amounted to nothing; and having employed half an hour at this unsuccessfully, I perceived that two daughters of Mrs. Burne, who were beautiful as Venus, the eldest of whom was scarcely eighteen years of age, were not indifferent to the boatmen, by the glances which they cast upon them from time to time. I quitted these stupid brutes to attach myself to the two pretty girls, in order to enlist them in my interests, and make use of them in opposition to the boatmen, as it is natural for the sweethearts to have all power with their lovers. I caressed them, I embraced them, one after the other. I

said to them a thousand flattering and obliging things, and veritably I had no difficulty in playing this game; for they were of the most ravishing beauty, and my sincere compliments proceeded from the heart. I was determined to pass the night at Mrs. Burne's, in case I should not succeed in crossing the Firth, and I sent back the old woman.

li

to

W

m

m

al

S

W

SS

I

h

cl

ro

se th

an

tv

W

 \mathbf{m}

gr

ab

if

ce

sa

At the end of half an hour, I had got my two beauties entirely in my interests, and each of them made a bold assault upon her lover, making them all the prayers and entreaties possible, but with as little success as myself, and without being able to bend th m-the terrors of these stupid lovers being much stronger than their love. The beautiful and charming Mally Burne, the eldest of the two, repulsed to the end, and, indignant at their obstinacy, turned to her sister, and said to her, "Ah! Jenny, these are lazy and despicable cowards. I would not for any thing in the world that this unfortunate gentleman should be taken in our house. I feel pity for him. Will you take an oar? I will take another, and we will go across ourselves, to the eternal disgrace of these two raggamuffins without souls." Jenny consented without hesitation. I fell upon their neck, and gave them a thousand tender embraces alternately, the one after the other, from the bottom of my heart.

I thought at first that the resolution of these generous girls would have influenced their lovers; but these lazy dogs—more beasts than the brutes themselves—were not in the least degree moved by them, preserving their indifference, and leaving it to be done by these charming beauties without being in the smallest degree affected by it. Seeing the stubbornness of the boatmen, and wishing to profit by the offer of these charming girls, I took upon the instant two oars upon my shoulders, and marched to the borders of the Firth between my two beauties. I launched the boat into the water, and these amiable girls having entered it, I pushed it along; then taking one of the oars to myself, I gave them the other

s, and r they iments e night rossing

ies enassault reaties vithout l lovers ul and l to the r sister, spicable hat this

I feel mother, race of insented them a fter the

enerous

zy dogs not in indifbeauties Seeing by the wo oars Firth water, along;

ie other

to row by turns, by relieving one another, when they should feel themselves fatigued. I experienced at that moment that every kind of skill may become useful. During the stay which I made in Russia, where they often made parties of pleasure on the river, I amused myself sometimes in rowing, little then foreseeing that I should avail myself of it one day to save my life. We left Broughty at ten o'clock at night, and we arrived at midnight at the other side of the Firth, which is about two miles in breadth; the weather being fine, starlight, and sufficiently clear to distinguish the way. I admired the conduct of Heaven towards me, and the visible effects of Providence; but at the moment when I thought of my good fortune in having escaped the detachment of cavalry, and having passed the Firth, it came into my mind at the same time the infinite number of such encounters, which would necessarily befall me, still to encounter before being saved in foreign lands; and this reflection chilled the joy that I would have otherwise experienced. My two beauties having disembarked with me, to put me into the highway which leads to the town of St. Andrews, I took leave of these charming girls, truly enamoured of their sentiments and generosity, quitting them with a sensible regret, as I should never see them again. I embraced them a thousand times, one after the other; and as they obstinately insisted on not receiving any recompense in money, I found means of sliding ten or twelve shillings into the pocket of the charming Mally, who was one of the most perfect beauties that nature had formed, made to be painted, with an elegant manner, and with all the graces possible. In any other position they would have been able to have tempted me to make a stay in their village; and if it should be my lot to return to my native country, I shall certainly be at Broughty expressly to see them.

I had not been able to form any plan of advance that I should make, or the route which I ought to follow; a thousand obstacles to surmount sprung up at every step, while un-

ev

ru

m

im

me

sei

wi eff

 $_{\rm in}$

the

at

cor

res

exi

ter

the wh

pea thi

kil

and

up

cut

wh it

tha

ref

spe

and

my

we:

ple

the

foreseen circumstances also presented themselves in my favour. Ever attentive to preserve my sang froid, and my reflection, to be able to meet troublesome and unexpected encounters, and to avail myself rapidly of propitious incidents which might attend fortune (equally fickle in its favours and repulses), I always experienced a mixture of good and bad events, but uncertain which would preponderate in my lot. I could not recollect during my crossing the Firth of any person of my acquaintance who dwelt in the extent of the land between the two arms of the sea, which was about twelve miles in breadth-almost all the gentlemen of the county, which they call Fife, having taken up arms for Prince Edward, were in the same situation as myself. I could not see any person there to whom I could address myself besides my cousin, Mrs. Spence, whose two grandmothers were sisters, daughters of Douglas, Baron of Whittengeme, a branch of the house of the Duke of Douglas. She had an estate close to St. Andrews, and made her ordinary residence in that town; but St. Andrews was at all times the most fanatical town in Scotland, renowned by the assassination of their Archbishop, the Cardinal Bethune. Full of a malignant race of Calvinistic hypocrites, who masked their wickedness under the cloak of religion, the greatest cheats and rascals in their intercourse, and who, nevertheless, carried their sanctified dissimulation so far as to lift their bonnet in taking a pinch of snuff to ask God's blessing on it; in short, who have always the name of God in their mouths, and the devil in their hearts: a city truly worthy of the fate of Sodom and Gommorrah. Meantime, I resolved to go thither. It was a seaport, and I was seduced with the hope, of finding there my passage in some ship for foreign parts by means of my cousin, Mrs. Spence.

Having marched the whole night, as soon as the day began to appear, I stopped upon the border of a rivulet to assuage my feet, the toes of which were blistered and peeled my

d my

d en-

dents

s and

bad

7 lot.

per-

land

welve

untv.

rince

d not

esides

sters.

of the

ose to

own;

wn in

shop.

Cal-

er the

inter-

issim-

snuff

ys the

earts:

orrah.

and I

ge in

Mrs.

day let to

eeled

even to the bones as with a razor, by my thick stockings and rustic shoes, which I found full of blood when I detached myself from them to put my feet to trample in the water; I felt immediately by the bathing the shooting pains less violent and more supportable. During two hours that I remained there, my feet always in the rivulet, I experienced a sweetness, and serenity overspread my soul, and a tranquility of spirits, without the least agitation, and without the more light effusions of the passions which prevailed, like as in my sleep in Samuel's house after the dream which made me enter into the rash enterprise of attempting to go to Edinburgh, although at the same time overpowered, and in a condition to move compassion in the breast of the most hardened. I was resigned to die, and I prayed the Supreme Being with extreme fervour to be pleased of his goodness and pity to terminate in an instant my sorrowful existence! Certainly the prospect of death, at any other time so formidable, but which I then regarded as my greatest good, would have appeared sweet and delightful, and would not have had anything terrible in it. I regretted bitterly not having been killed at the battle of Culloden, having escaped it so nearly; and I envied the lot of my comrades who were reposing dead upon the field of battle. The horrible idea of seeing an executioner with a knife in his hand ready to rip up my bowels while alive*, and tear out my heart, still beating, and throw it in the fire; my imagination was impressed with the idea that I should have the dismal fate of being taken, and this reflection made an impression so strong upon me by the prospect of thus perishing on the scaffold in presence of a cruel and barbarous populace, that I was often tempted to shorten my days in a moment on the borders of this rivulet, which were become burdensome to me; and in my position the pleasures of existence appeared to me a very small thing.†

^{*} The mode of punishment to which all those were subjected who had the misfortune to be taken and condemned.

 $[\]dagger$ I reasoned with myself on the immortality of the soul.

SI

sti

re

ex of

re

to Sl

ad

Re

res

ree

tal

he

W

on

tra

W

ho

bo

ar

T

w]

ur

an

de

CO

he

m

ga

to

ho

su

How do the effects of hope terminate, the smallest ray of which supports the unfortunate in spite of the evidence of danger the most inevitable, inspires him with a supernatural courage, diffuses a balm even on the wounds which produce his death, and seems to disarm the hand of the suicide. Is it in the power of Providence to give to man a succour and a consolation more useful and more efficacious? and by a gracious felicity the unfortunate are not deficient in hopes; they do not see in all their projects but the termination of their evils. It is from this that they terminate all their complexities. I implored the Almighty, that if it was my destiny thus to perish in sufferings, at least not to leave me to languish a long time between life and death—cruel incertitude and a terrible alternative to support. I put on my stockings and shoes, and rose to depart, but scarcely was I able to keep myself from falling, my stockings and shoes being indurated with blood; as soon as I began to move a pace, I felt pains which pierced me to the heart. I took off my shoes and stockings; I put my feet into the water, and having immersed my stockings and shoes in the rivulet for half an hour to soften them, I then found myself in a condition to walk, and I departed. I met a countryman after an hour on the road, who told me that it was still four miles from St. Andrews. I flattered myself that the peasant was mistaken; but I found in the end these miles as long as the leagues in the environs of Paris. According to report of the peasant, I had made ten of these miles since midnight that I left the boat. I arrived at St. Andrews about eight o'clock in the morning, much fatigued. It was Sunday, and the streets were full of people, who stopped me at every pace to ask at me news of the rebels. I always answered them that I knew not ing come only from Dundee, a town almost as far Andrews. I asked for the house of Mrs. Spence the town, and having found it, I said to her chan bermaid I had a letter to deliver to her mistress into her own hands. ay of ce of atural oduce e. Is and a by a opes; ion of comestiny guish and a s and nyself with which ings; stockiem, I d. I ld me ttered in the ons of le ten rrived much eople,

aid I

of the

She led me into the chamber of Madam Spence, who was still in bed, and immediately she retired. My cousin did not recognise me at first, owing to my disguise; but having examined me for a moment, she cried, bursting into a torrent of tears., "Ah! my dear child, you are lost without resource; how have you ever been able to think of coming to St. Andrews, and to a house so much suspected as mine." She was a Roman Catholic. "The populace yesterday," added she, "made prisoner the son of my neighbour, Mr. Ross (who was disguised like a peasant), before he had even rested half-an-hour in his father's house, and he is actually in prison at Dundee, loaded with irons." I did not expect a reception like this, but I saw quite well the false step I had taken, and I was very uneasy to get out of it. I beseeched her for mercy's sake to calm herself, otherwise that she would be the means of betraying me, by raising suspicions on my account in the minds of her servants. Being a little tranquilized, she wrote immediately to her tenant, who was at a quarter of a league from the town, to give me a horse, and conduct me as far as Wemyss, a village on the border of the Firth, which I had yet to pass in order to arrive at Edinburgh, about ten miles from St. Andrews. This was all that I could desire for the best, for I was overwhelmed with fatigue, and the wounds in my feet. She mentioned in her letter to the farmer that she was sending under my charge to Edinburgh papers absolutely necessary, and very pressing for her process, which was about to be decided in Edinburgh in a few days. I took leave of my cousin immediately, without having even sat down in her house, and I left with a little girl which she sent to conduct me to the house of her tenant, taking by-roads across the gardens, not to appear more in the streets of that execrable town. When I was out of it, the flattering idea of having a horse as far as Wemyss gave me new strength and courage to support my pains.

I delivered the letter to the farmer, and the reply of this animal petrified me as a statue. "Mrs. Spence," said he to me, "is mistress to deprive me of my farm, to give it to whom she pleases, but she is not able to make me profane the day of the Lord, by giving my horse to travel on Sunday." I represented to him with all the energy possible the necessity of having a horse on account of the process of Mrs. Spence, and that the delay in sending the papers to her advocate might be productive of the greatest loss to her; but all that I could say had not the least effect, and he persisted obstinately in his refusal. This holy scoundrel made no scruple to deceive and cheat his neighbours on the Sabbath as on other days, nor to spill upon the scaffold the blood of the unfortunate gentlemen whom they had made prisoners in their infernal raids, who had never done them any ill, and whom they even did not know.* These hypocrites, the execration and the refuse of the human race, with their eyes continually lifted up to heaven, use as a mask all that is most sacred to deceive more securely; and, unfortunately, this same spirit of hypocrisy is found indifferently in all religions.

*"The man of the people," says a modern author, "is altogether a perfect savage, whose spirit and whose heart have not been in the smallest degree cultivated; the care of his manners is committed to priests who are content to fill his imagination with terrors, fables, and chimerus, and oblige him to conform to their wicked practices—not dreaming in the smallest degree to render him either reasonable or sociable. In general, the people in every country are very devout, very credulous, very zealous for religion, of which they comprehend nothing, very much disposed to the interest of their priests, whom may follow blindly; but they remain always in complete ignorance of the principles of true morality; they have no idea of equity, humanity, sensibility; they find the secret of allying religion with debauchery, sensuality, and, often, with crime. These fanatics veil their infamies and wickednesses by their devotion."

† "In fine," says Puffendorff, "there is not an animal naturally more dangerous and more indomitable than man, nor more inclined to vices calculated to disturb society, so far as it pleases him to exercise his fury against his fellow men; and that the most part of the evils to which human life is subject proceed manifestly from man himself."—Duties of Man and Citizen, tome ii., page 56.

the of tion fest comput can tals sign of t retr das quil St.

No

quit ther tion peri time to a show eei first knowlet a

> sting serpe their rend hear

dist

pull

this

e to

it to fane

lay."

ssity

ence, ocate

that

bsti-

uple

s on

the

s in

and

ecra-

conmost

this

ons.†

her a allest

o are

oblige

allest

eople igion,

est of

plete

luity, auch-

amies

more

cal-

ainst

ife is

tizen,

Never could I fail to have great distrust of those who made themselves known with ostentation as zealous observers of the ceremonial part of religion, and by an outward devotion—their actions rarely conforming thereto, which is a manifest proof of their falsehood. In place of that, true piety is concealed in the heart, and seeks not the applause of the public. I would not fear these despicable minions in an open campaign, or in the villages; for these wicked and cruel mortals are always cowards, and these qualities are infallible signs of their want of heart. In knocking out the brains of one of these monsters with one of my pistols, I would make my retreat with the other pistol in my hand without any of these dastards ever daring to offer opposition; but I was not tranquil during the quarter of an hour that I was in the town of St. Andrews.

Frustrated in my hopes of getting a horse, I immediately quitted the house of the farmer, without having sat down therein, and took the road to Wemyss. What a horrible situation! Crippled by the wounds in my feet, which made me experience a pain so sharp that the shootings deprived me sometimes nearly altogether of breathing—not knowing to whom to address myself at the village of Wemyss, supposing that I should yet retain strength to make out these ten miles—forceing the risk that I should run there of being seized at the first inn at which I should ask to pass the night—in fine, not knowing what to do nor where to go. I found luckily a rivulet about half a-mile from that execrable town. I laid at a distance from me my musket off the highway, and having pulled off my shoes and stockings at the edge of the water, I

Hobbes says in his treatise on Man, "Forasmuch as swords and guns are the arms of men, the brute beasts are provided with nails, teeth, and stings: so man surpasses in rapacity and cruelty the wolves, the bears, the serpents, who do not exercise their rapacity, but when hunger impels; nor their cruelty, but when they are irritated; and hunger itself in the distance renders man famished. All the scourges of nature do not revolt the human heart equal to the injuries of man."

the

the

tre

to

int

Th

of

go

ou

ter

nei

sec

rea

up

fer

mi

vei

ins

if ·

dra

Di

an

oce

the

and

act

plie

am

cei

bel

hou

cor of

of.

found the wounds of my feet considerably increased, the blood running from them like a torrent. I put my feet to steep in the water, as formerly, and did the same with my shoes and stockings, which were full of blood. But this was not my greatest evil: I had the mind as much lacerated and tormented as the body. The hopes that I had formed of any asylum and succour from my cousin Spence had vanished into air, and the ten long miles from Broughty to St. Andrews were useless and completely lost. I relapsed into a depression of mind and body which I had never felt before. It was in vain that I racked my imagination to discover some resource. I could see none. The castle of Lord Rollo was at the side of the Firth, but at the distance of twenty-five miles to the south. I was convinced of the friendship of his Lordship and the benevolence of all his family; but how was I to get there? It was several days' journey for me, then, so fatigued and knocked up. Besides, supposing that I should be able to get there, I should find myself at a greater distance from Edinburgh than in the place where I was. I did not know which way to turn me. In the meantime, I saw no other course to take; and, in short, I decided on it, forming my plan to make the way by short journeys, and always to sleep in the fields, to avoid as much as I could the towns and villages which I should find in my way in going to Lord Rollo's.

The body borne down with pains and fatigues, and the mind cruelly agitated and tormented—lost in an abyss of reflections, all of a sudden I recollected myself of a chambermaid of my mother, who was married some two years before to George Lillie, gardener to M. Bethune, at Balfour, whose mansion was not but half a league from Wemyss. This girl having had a great deal of pains and cares for my mother during a long illness which she had suffered, my father, in consideration of her attachment, paid the expense of the nuptials. I knew we! "At Lillie was a Calvinist, and one of

l, the

eet to

h my

s was

dand

of any

d into

drews

epres-

e. It

some

o was

y-five

of his

w was

then,

hat I

reater

as. I

I saw on it,

s, and

ld the

going

d the

yss of

mber-

before

whose

is girl

other

ier, in

f the

one of

the most furious and outrageous in these districts; but, from the favours he had received from my family, I did not dread treachery on his part, supposing he should not lend himself to my service; and, in case he should incline to receive me into his house, I should be there in the greatest security. The remembrance of Lillie and his wife gave me an absence of mind so inconceivable, that I wished upon the instant to go thither, without thinking even of going to sleep, and without perceiving that I had not rested, not having had a quarter of an hour that I had sat down, and I felt no more neither my weariness nor my pains. Zeno and the Stoics, a sect of philosophers, have maintained that there are neither real pleasures nor pains, and that different sensations depend upon fixed attention upon our enjoyments and our sufferings. It is certain that, in this moment of absence of mind, I did not feel any more the pains of my feet, though very violent; but from this reverie I was awakened in an This philosophy would be a grand happiness to men if these philosophers were able to teach us the art of withdrawing our attention when we pleased.*

I had eaten nothing since my repast in the enclosure at Dinnetrune, where M. Graham filled my pockets with bread and cheese. In fact, I had always had my mind too much occupied to feel hunger; but my appetite returned with my

^{*&}quot;One pleasure which I have searched for," says the Abbe de Cardillac, "equally recals all the agreeable ideas with which it is possible to be allied; the imagination reviews many sensible perceptions for me which it receives; and in that state it enjoys pleasures the most vivid. When it seizes on the action of my imagination, I feel immediately an enchantment. By this explication, we feel that the pleasures of the imagination are as real, and also as natural, as others, although one pronounces generally the contrary example:—A man tormented by the gout, and who is not able to bear it, perceives in a moment that he has thereby at least recovered a sense that he believed to be lost—more pain; an instant after, the fire has been set to his house—more weakness; he is already out of danger when he dreams of succour. His imagination, suddenly and vividly struck, reacts upon all parts of his frame, and produces a revolution that saves him."—Essay on the Origin of Human Knowledge.

hope of finding a refuge at the house of Lillie; and taking out of my pocket some of the bread and cheese, I made a good repast of them during the time my feet, shoes, and stockings, soaked themselves in the stream. My strength and courage returned at the same time; and having taken two hours repose, and placed some white paper under the wounds of my feet, to prevent the rubbing of my shoes and stockings, I made six miles all on a stretch without stopping, the half of the road from St. Andrews to Wemyss, and there did not remain more than four from that to Balfour. The desire and impatience to be there made me feel less keenly my fatigues and pains. I still found a rivulet where I could repose, making the same operations as formerly. My toes and feet were in a most pitiable case, lacerated and torn even to the bone, of which I shall retain the marks all my life, having the second toe of my left foot entirely twisted by the cruel journey. In the meantime, they did not hinder me from accomplishing the other four miles to Balfour, although suffering the most excessive pains; and I arrived there about nine o'clock in the evening, with joy and pleasure which surpass imagination.

When I found myself within a short space from the house of Lillie, I seized the door with both my hands to prevent me from falling to the ground. My strength was totally exhausted, and would not have enabled me to go a step farther to have even saved me from the scaffold. With difficulty my legs were able to support me in dragging me up to the door. What will necessity and the desire of preserving one's existence in a case such as mine not do, seeming to give an increase of power to sustain incredible efforts. Having knocked, Lillie came to open the door to me; and not having recognised me under my beggarly dress, he said to me several times with quickness and fright, "Who are you? What are you seeking? What do you want? I did not answer him, but I advanced inside the door, fearing that he would shut me out by the nose; this made him redouble his terror, and he was

qui he bef hal gre obe to con tud me stat hea Mv1 sa with to b had adde to s chol oblig unde who been voic agai toge fana with upor it sh the

undr

trade

feet

king quite trembling, taking me for some robber. I asked him if goodhe had any stranger in his house? His wife, who was seated before the fire, recognised my voice, and perceiving my ings, habiliments, she cried immediately to her husband—"Oh! rage pose, great God! I know him; shut the door quickly." Lillie obeyed without further examining me; and following me up et, to to the light he also recognised me. In spite of my grievous e sixfromcondition I could not keep myself from laughing at the attitude of Lillie at the moment of his surprise in distinguishing than to be me under my disguise. Confounded, stupefied, petrified as a statue, he joined his hands together, even lifting his eyes to still heaven. "Ah!" said he to me, "this does not surprise me! per-My wife and I were speaking of you yesterday evening; and most I said to her, that for all the world I believed that you were $\operatorname{ich} \mathbf{I}$ with that wicked race." I answered him that he had reason oe of to believe that, from the principles of attachment in which I the the the had been brought up for the House of Stuart. "Actually," added I to him, "it is necessary to assist me, my poor George, most k in to save me from the powers that be." This was a melantion. choly adventure, and truly humiliating for Lillie, to be ouse obliged to give an asylum to a rebel, and to find himself under the necessity, from gratitude, to succour one of those vent whom he so much decried! he who, of all the country, had tally ther been one of the greatest orators against the rebels, with his $_{\rm my}$ voice in their meetings, louder than others in exclamations against the Pope and the Pretender, whom he always joined oor. existogether. Lillie was an honest man, notwithstanding his ease fanatical principles. He assured me that he was penetrated ked. with my condition, and he would do all that could depend ised upon him to save me and get me across the Firth as soon as it should be possible. Finding me as an automaton, without with the power of moving either arm or leg, Lillie and his wife eekut I undressed me, and (the gardeners in Scotland all making a out trade of quackery), Lillie having bathed the wounds in my was feet with whisky, which made me suffer an insupportable

pain, applied to them in the end a balm, and they put on me their stockings and slippers. I found myself solaced by this operation, and as it were resuscitated.

th

in

res

mı

the

ros

up

wi

fre

one

the

if 1

hal

in

sav

of

stre

and

arm

Lill

cut

com

my

wall

Lilli

oppo

prev

wou

I sai

in or

shev

repu

sour

Sir,

I sent Lillie to make my compliments to his master, M. Bethune, beseeching him not to consider me bad if his gardener lost some hours of work, I being at his house and in great need of his services. M. Bethune sent back Lillie on the instant to say to me on his part that he was in despair at not being able to come and see me, having been indisposed for some time, and having that moment gone to bed; that he could do no more than offer me a bed at his house, where I would be much better than in Lillie's, but that he begged me most instantly to send and fetch freely from his house whatever I should stand in need of. He wished that Lillie should take charge of chickens, wine, and other things; but from some desire that Lillie had to afford me good cheer at his own house, he very prudently did not wish to take anything, fearing, as he said to me, that it might create suspicion among M. Bethune's domestics that he had some one concealed in his house. I praised Lillie much for his prudence and discretion. Mrs. Lillie brought me quickly a plate of collops, which I devoured in haste, having more desire to sleep than to eat; having been two days and as many nights always on the march, since my departure from Samuel's, without having slept but three hours in the enclosure of M. Graham. Lillie having undressed me, carried me in his arms to bed; it was impossible for me to put my foot to the ground for all things in the world. I slept in one continued slumber from ten o'clock in the evening to the next day. at nine and a half hours in the evening, twenty-three hours and a half without ever awakening, Mr. Lillie having given orders not to make the least noise, and not having wished to awaken me to receive the visit of M. Bethune, who had come to see me.

As nothing restores the exhausted body so much as sleep,

n me

this

r, M.

gar-

nd in ie on

air at

posed

at he

here ${f I}$

ed me

what-

hould

from

s own

thing,

picion

con-

ate of

sire to

many from

enclo-

ed me y foot

e con-

t day,

hours

given

ned to

o had

sleep,

the precious gift of nature, and a boon of heaven in our sufferings, I felt myself greatly refreshed, the body so well restored, and it was only my feet which caused me to suffer much. Mrs. Lillie had a chicken ready to put upon the spit the moment I should awake. I ate it in my bed before I rose. Lillie having removed the dressing which he had put upon my feet, replaced it by another. He told me that his wife's mother kept an inn in the village of Wemyss, much frequented by fishers; that perhaps she would find me some one of her acquaintance who would willingly put me across the Firth; and he proposed that I should go there with him if I was in a condition to travel, Wemyss being not more than half a league from Balfour. I was not displeased that Lillie, in his desire to shake himself clear of me, was as anxious to save me as I was myself. He offered me a horse on the part of M. Bethune, but before accepting it, I wished to try my strength and see if I was in a state to travel. Having arisen and made the tour of the bed-chamber, supported by his arms, I saw that I was able to do without the horse. Mrs. Lillie, with usual attention, during the time that I slept had cut the feet of my great boots to make the stockings more comfortable; in spite of that I always suffered great pain in my feet.

We set out towards half-past ten in the evening, and I walked with pain; borne up rather by support on the arms of Lillic, he trailed me after him; but the hope of finding an opportunity of crossing the Firth, and going up to Edinburgh, prevented me from feeling the pains which at any other time would have appeared to me unsupportable. Along the road, I said to him jokingly, "My poor Lillie, if I am actually taken in our journey, what a figure you would cut. You never durst shew yourself to advantage in these pious assemblies. Your reputation of the good Calvinist would be gone without resource." He let escape a deep sigh, and cried out, "Ah! Sir, do not speak to me of that." I made an attempt to laugh,

sp

a 1

of

his

ou

hir

car

ser

hin

me

list

tha

---r

non

aba

wit

con

inn,

ing

spai

time

atte

proj

his

this

wor

clev

to hi

and e

not pa

course

curtai disgui

contra

and continued, "It is true, Lillie, you would not be injured all your life like me, but your character would be lost for ever among your brethren." I amused myself during the whole route in making similar remarks to him, and I had the pleasure of observing that he regarded his honour as completely engaged, and that he sought to get me across the Firth as soon as possible—as much for fear of being discovered at his house, as to make a merit in the estimation of my family.

Arrived at the house of his mother-in-law, she told us that of all the fishers of Wemyss she did not know anyone that one could trust, except one named Salmon, adding that he was a very zealous Calvinist, and a violent enemy against the party of Prince Edward; but, besides, a man of wealth, and much distinguished in the village for his probity and good manners; that we could apply to him immediately, and that if he did not incline to render me a service, he was too honourable a man to do me an injury.

We went instantly to the house of Salmon. It was nearly midnight, and we found him already up, and engaged arranging his nets to go a-fishing. Knowing the voice of Lillie, he opened the door to us. Lillie, after many efforts, at length broke silence with a plaintive tone of voice, and a humble air, abashed, bashful, and embarrassed. "Salmon, my friend," said he to him, "behold the only son of my wife's mistress. He has been fool and rash enough to join that wicked race which seeks to destroy our religion, and renders us slaves. Behold, my friend, the miserable state to which he has reduced himself. Everybody knows the kindness his family has bestowed upon my wife and me at our marriage. I honour them and respect them; and I fear much that if he were taken it would cause the death of his mother, as well as his father, for they are very much attached to him, being their only son. I come, my friend Salmon, to beg you with joined hands to give him a passage tomorrow in your boat when you go to Leith to sell your fish." The pathetic manner in which Lillie ever whole asure y ensoon nouse,

old us nyone g that gainst realth, d good d that o hon-

nearly

rranglie, he
length
ble air,
riend,"
istress.
ed race
slaves.
educed
has benonour
taken
father,
ly son.
inds to

go to

Lillie

spoke to Salmon gave me pleasure; but the reply, couched in a morose tone, did not please me so well, and gave me no hope of relief. "You deserve well," said Salmon, "when you save his life-you who wish to abolish our holy religion, destroy our liberties, and render us slaves. No, Lillie, he addresses himself badly to me. I would not do him any evil-I am not capable of informing against him—he is in safety in that respect; but he ought not to expect that I will ever do him a service, nor any one of that wicked race of rebels." I offered him all the gold that I had remaining—six guineas—to carry me over next day in his shallop; but he was not inclined to listen to speaking about advantage. I could not; and seeing that it was not on the side of interest that he could be taken, -not being selfish, and that he appearing from his physiognomy to be an honest man,* I had no other resource than to abandon my enterprise. I had offered him all my money without making any impression upon him. I hoped still to convert him in my favour by persuasion. As he kept an inn, I requested of him at least to have the pleasure of drinking a bottle of beer with him. He consented; and I did not spare the beer, drinking cup after cup with them: in the meantime without speaking any further of my passage, but always attentive to insinuate myself into his good graces, to render him propitious to my wishes. At the end of an hour, he turned his head to Lillie, and said to him, "It is a great pity that this young man has been seduced and perverted by that unworthy rabble of rebels; he is a good boy." Lillie profited cleverly by this to let fall some words in my favour, and said to him that it would not be long ere he repented it severely.

^{*}A mirror more true, more expressive than his gesture, his discourse, and even his accent, which could sometimes disguise itself, but which could not paint this rapid light which divides the soul, which has its involuntary course glistening in the eyes even of a knave, who feigns zeal and draws the curtain, and wishes to shape it to his own soul; but it escapes, it pierces his disguises, and leaves him to see himself naked in spite of every effort to the contrary.

ou

to

asy

suc

of

ret

the

and

It

ma

and

froi

insi

adv

cave

amı

guis

nigh

fron

he f

then

at fi

but

hosp

and

at tl

This

their

upor

And

that

and

agair

I did not appear to understand them; but I saw my affairs were in a prosperous way; and I continued to push the bottles of small beer, which was weak as water. In short, I played my part so well, and gained so entirely the friendship of Salmon, that this honest man offered me all at once a passage in his long boat next day, without wishing to be understood as speaking of money, but from a pure and noble generosity on his part. It is true, this was not a game difficult to play face to face with poor Salmon, a man truly virtuous and respected by all the village for his good morals and excellent qualities, as the mother of Mrs. Lillie had told me of him; and a virtuous man can never have a hard heart, but is always susceptible of compassion and humanity for the unfortunate. In whatever class among men one finds virtue, it pleases, and one is prepossessed in favour of him who possesses it. Thus, one is not obliged to do violence to one's sentiments, to say flattering, obliging, and courteous things to a worthy man, whatever be the lowness of his condition, as one is in presence of a Lord of the first rank without merit, and whose elevation is the effect of chance.

Salmon had but one share of the long boat with several other fishers, and he had the circumspection of guarding himself in presence of his partners. He told me to conceal myself in a cave which was in sight of the sea, about a gun-shot from Wemyss; and at the break of day, when I should see the fishing boats reurning into port, I should come down and demand from the one where I should see him if he would give me a passage to Leith on payment; that he would answer me, "Oh, yes;" and he would settle immediately with his partners as to the price. If any one of the boat should not be willing to agree, he would engage them to consent to it—Salmon and Lillie at the same time teaching me the accent of a countryman in which I should address them. I quitted Salmon, putting a guinea into his hand, telling him that that was only arles. He made difficulty in accepting it, representing to me that I

ffairs

ottles

layed

Sal-

ge in

od as

ty on

face

ected

lities,

nd a

sus-

mate.

, and

Thus,

o say

man,

sence

ation

everal

him.

nyself

n-shot

ld see

n and

l give

er me,

rtners

illing

n and

yman

utting

arles.

that I

ought to save it, because it was not gain that induced him to render me a service. Lillie having accompanied me as far as the cave, took leave to return home, and offered me an asylum at his house in case this opportunity should not be successful. Although I regarded my passage across this arm of the sea as beyond doubt, I was very glad to find a secure retreat at the house of Lillie—it being impossible to forsee the troublous circumstances that might occur to me.

This cave was one of the curious antiquities of Scotland, and according to tradition was formerly a Pagan Temple. It is scooped out under a mountain, the entry of which may be about five feet in height, and three feet in breadth, and the edge of the sea is at a distance of about thirty paces from the foot of the mountain. It is very high and spacious inside, and appears to have been of an immense depth. An adventure happened to James II., King of Scotland, in this cavern, which has rendered it celebrated. The King, who amused himself going about the country under different disguises, found himself overtaken by a violent storm in a dark night, and took refuge in this cavern to afford him a shelter from the tempestuous weather. Having foisted himself inside, he found there a great many men and women, ready to seat themselves at a table to sup upon a roast sheep. He supposed at first by their looks that he had not fallen into good hands; but it was beyond his power to retreat, and he begged their hospitality until the storm was over. They consented to this, and invited the King, whom they did not know, to sit down at the table with them to partake of part of their supper. This was a band of robbers and assassins. Immediately on their finishing their supper, one of them presented an ashet upon which there were two poignards in the form of a St. Andrew's Cross, saying at the same time to the King that that was the dessert which they always served to strangers; and that he behoved to choose one of the poignards to fight against the one who should be deputed by the company to

ce

ins

an

to

wł

gra

an

to

sel

thi

at

goi

ing

to-

fisl

thi

W

my

fur

wa

the

bee

we

ma

wh

air

of

stai

on

tha

hap

in 1

Sal

attack him. The King did not lose his presence of mind. He seized quickly the two poignards with both his hands, buried them in the hearts of the two robbers who were sitting on each side of him, running like lightning to the mouth of the cave, and escaped their pursuit by the darkness of the night. The King caused seize this troop of assassins next day in the morning, and made them all be hanged.

I entered a small way in advance in this cavern, and laid myself down upon the earth, where I slept about an hour, till all of a sudden I was awakened by a noise the most horrible and terrific that I had ever heard. I doubted at first of the fidelity of Salmon, in spite of the very favourable opinions I had formed of him, fearing that it was a detachment of soldiers which he had sent to make me prisoner. I ensconced myself in the depths of the cavern with a pistol presented in each hand, advancing always until I should find myself cased up against the wall, the better to defend myself. remained for some moments in this attitude, I prepared to defend myself or to be killed rather than to be made prisoner. I listened at the same time to the noise with attention, and I was soon quickly convinced by the velocity of the movement of the object which created this hubbub, that it could not be from men, and that was all that I then cared for. For some time the object was close to my ears to affright me, and the instant after in the distance with a swiftness and rapidity incredible in its march. Thus I ceased to listen further to this horrible phenomenon, of which I could comprehend nothing, which made a racket and noise very like that of trumpets, and in short a combination of different sounds which was to me altogether unknown. I approached to the entrance of the cave, without having any inclination to sleep more.

As soon as the day began to clear at a distance, I fixed my eyes upon the sea, to bring to my view the boats which were fishing a quarter of a league from the shore, and as soon as I saw them enter the harbour of Wemyss, I then decended from the cavern, and followed with exactitude the instructions which Salmon had given me.

The boat, to my misfortune, had made a very bad fishing, and Salmon had been forced by his partners to sell their fish to another boat, they having so few that it was not worth while to go to Leith to sell them. I asked them if they would grant me a passage to go to Leith for payment. Salmon answered me immediately "most willingly;" and he went up to his partners in order to arrange about it among themselves. They all agreed to it in consideration of a crown of three "livres" for my passage, and I had inconceivable joy at it. At the moment that we were agreed, and that I was going to embark, Salmon's wife arrived—cursing and swearing "that she would not allow her husband to go to Leith to-day, where he had no business, his boat having sold all his fish, above all with a stranger; and that there appeared something mysterious in it which she could not comprehend." What a dreadful misfortune for me! I swore and railed to myself against this wicked fish-woman; but this did not further me a bit; and Salmon, who was the weakest party, was obliged to submit himself to the will of his wife. I had the prudence not to mix myself up with their dispute, fearing -from the suspicions she seemed to show-that she had been able to understand our conversation in the night, while we were in drinking the beer, not knowing that Salmon was married, and that his wife was sleeping in the chamber even where we were. I desisted with a good grace, and with an air of indifference. Salmon proposed to me to drink a bottle of beer together. I consented to it; and in going up the stair, he slipt into my hand the guinea which I had given him on leaving his house, whispering into my ear-"You see, Sir, that I am not master. I wish you, with all my heart, the happiness of saving yourself; and I am sorry at not having it in my power to contribute to it." I admired the honesty of Salmon; for not only could he have kept the guinea by in-

of solconced ated in cased Having red to isoner.
and I rement not be some and the upidity to this othing,

mpets,

was to

of the

fixed

which

and as en de-

mind.

ands,

itting

ath of

of the next

d laid

ur, till

orrible of the

ions I

forming against me, and have had my purse and watch, but he would have had a considerable reward given him by the Governmant for every rebel that he might make prisoner. This generous conduct was so much the more to be praised, that he was an enemy of the House of Stuart, and that he did not know me. Humanity alone, and a noble spirit, made him act with elevated sentiments above his condition.

I was not inclined to return directly to the house of Mrs. Lillie's mother, this wicked fish-wife having expressed her suspicions of me before every one. I was afraid of being followed. I took the long route along the seaside to return to the cavern, and when I was opposite the entry, looking around me on every side, and seeing nobody, I proceeded quickly inside. I had an extreme curiosity to find out the cause of the terrible uproar which had given me such uneasiness in the night, of which I could form no idea. I advanced thirty or forty paces in the darkness, having lost even the sight of the mouth of the cave, and the great noise commenced immediately the same as before; but when I clapped my hands, and cried with all my strength, it increased a thousand times more, and astounded my ears completely. I perceived even the outline of the rapid movement of those unknown objects which constantly approached nearer to me as if they would attack me. I returned back as far as I was able to see the entrance of the cavern, and redoubled my cries and clapping of hands; I saw depart in the end, owls and other innumerable birds of prey. The frightful noise of these animals could not be compared to any sound I had ever heard, their cries and flapping of wings in flying were confounded together by the echo of the cavern, and made but the same kind of noise, which pierced my ears; and the impetuosity of their flight resembled the raging of a storm. If I had not examined to the bottom, with coolness, the cause of an effect so singular, I never could have known to what to attribute it, and doubt not that an anchorite saint, had he been in my place, would have found supernatural miracl as to sor did cur

wa me

hav rec fav had the tak wh She wa Off liev me Poo ma tha hav of

> ner nar jun

ser

for

h, but

by the

soner.

aised.

hat he

made

Mrs.

r sus-

g fol-

to the

nd me

nside.

rrible

ht, of

forty

nouth

ly the

cried

e, and

utline

con-

k me.

of the

Saw

prey.

ed to

vings

vern,

ears;

of a

ness,

own

aint.

mir-

acles, in this adventure, and would have made romantic stories, as good St. Anthony,—for enthusiasm is always closely allied to credulity and childishness. I sought quietly to discover something of which I had no idea what it was, and which I did not comprehend; comparing with attention all the circumstances, preparing to defend myself with my pistols if it was any ferocious animal; but I recollected in a moment that men are the most wicked and mischievous of all animals.

I returned to the house of the mother of Mrs. Lillie. after having remained for about half an-hour in the cavern, and I recounted to her my distresses—that an opportunity, the most favourable in the world, for crossing the Firth, and which had all the appearance of being successful, had failed me by the wickedness of Salmon's wife, after my arrangements were taken with her husband; and I prayed her with earnestness to procure me some one who would pass me over at once, at whatever price it might be, I would not grudge the money. She immediately introduced into my chamber a man, without warning me otherwise than by telling me that he was an Officer of the Customs in the service of King George. I believed that her head was turned, or that she wished to betray me; but I was still more astonished and stupefied when she Logan to relate to him that I was with Prince Edward. This man, perceiving my uneasiness, told me not to be alarmed, that he had been in the same case as myself in 1715; that, having lost his effects, he was reduced to the fatal necessity of gaining his bread to accept this vile employment in the service of the usurper; but that his attachment and good wishes for the welfare of the House of Stuart were always the same.

Relieved of my alarms, I asked of him if he could not recommend me to some bonest man who would take me across the Firth, and that I would give him such remuneration as he could wish. He replied that there was one named David Cousselnaine, sacrist of the assembly of non-jurors in the village of Wemyss, a very honest man, and

ar

01

de

ar

ou

in

sa

hi

ha

ro

ni

th of

TI

sa fa

D

to di

se

m th

of

as

of

he

p.

of

0

very zealous to render service to all those who were of the party of Prince Edward, that I could not do better than address myself to him. He went out immediately to seek him, and returned in a moment with him. Cousselnaine said to me that he would take very willingly an oar, if he could find any other one that would join him; and he proposed to conduct me to the house of Mr. Robertson, at the village of Dubbyside, which is half a-league from Wemyss, to borrow his boat: he told me that Mr. Robertson was secretly on the side of the Prince, and that he would lend himself to all that I could desire.

We parted instantly for Dubbyside, Cousselnaine preceding me, as there were two bad villages in our way to cross; in case any one should wish to examine me, I desired that they should call me John Cousselnaine, a handloom weaver, the name and trade of his brother, whom no one knew in these villages; and if any one suspected me for a rebel, he should claim me and maintain against all that I was veritably his brother. I dreaded my new trade of weaver! Being only a servant, it was easy to play the part as I had done in the service of Mrs. Menzies and Samuel; but if any one should arrest me on suspicion, and should want to try me to work at my trade, I should be discovered immediately, and lost without resource. In the meantime, there was no trade that suited me better on this occasion. Mr. Robertson laughingly said that he would not lend me his boat, but that he would permit, with all his heart, Cousselnaine to unloose her whenever I should find any one to assist me in crossing the Firth; for as to him he did not know a single person at Dubbyside whom they could trust. He advised me to go and see M. Seton, a gentleman staying at Dubbyside, who had his oldest son in our army. I did not know the father, but I had contracted a friendship with the son. I was ignorant that his paternal house was at Dubbyside, and was charmed at the discovery.

f the

than

seek

said

could

ed to

ge of

rrow

n the

that

pre-

y to

sired

loom

one

for

hat **I**

wea-

rt as

but

nt to edia-

was

ert-

un-

cros-

rson go

had ut **I**

rant

med

Having found M. Seton at home, I told him my name, and renewed my friendship with his son. He made me enter on the instant into the public hall, where he tortured me to death by a thousand questions of which I understood nothing, and by incoherent proposals, receiving me very coldly, without my being able to divine the cause. After keeping me impatient during half an hour, all at once his son entered the saloon, and leapt upon my neck to embrace me. He told me that they had taken me for a spy sent to their house to take him prisoner; and although he had, for half an-hour that he had scrutinized me through a hole across the partition of the room, it was only that instant that he had been able to recognize me in my disguise. I was very glad to see Seton again, the more so that I was ignorant of his fate since the Battle of Culloden; and the pleasure of our meeting was reciprocal. There is always friendship between persons engaged in the same misfortunes. He invited me to stay with him at his father's, and his offer gave me pleasure, as I was likely at Dubbyside to find an opportunity of crossing the Firth.

I went a little after mid-day to Wemyss, promising myself to see the mother of Mrs. Lillie, always hoping that she would discover some one sufficiently humane to join himself to Conselnaine; but after a sojourn of eight days at the house of my friend, without being more advanced than the first day of my arrival there, we had a sharp alarm, which interrupted the pleasures which I was beginning to taste in the society of the very amiable family of M. Seton. Miss Seton having asked at a fishwife while she was selling her fish at the door of the house if she had any news, the fishwoman answered her, 'hat it was reported among other this a rebel was prowling about every day along the coast was the village of Wemyss, and that he offered lots of money to the fishers to give him a passage across: she added that they would be able very easily to lay held of him some day in his courses. One may imagine how much I was annoyed at this news,

Ι

di

Ol

al fo

be

m

qt

pr

na

sta

ar

W

ha

an

ta th

he

uı

W

fir

na

be

us

01

ai

01

m

ot th

more especially when they might have been able to have followed me to the house of M. Seton without my being able to have perceived them. As there was everything to fear that the house of M. Seton might be visited at the next moment, Seton, my companion in misfortune, decided himself to quit the house of his father the same evening, to take refuge at the house of some friend, and I myself also to return to Lillie's; but I was determined to make a final effort before quitting Dubbyside, to cross the Firth that night. I sent to seek out Cousselnaine, who came to me immediately and told me that, in spite of all the persuasions possible, he was unable to find any person who would undertake it. What a deplorable situation! To be so near Edinburgh, where centred all my wishes of being able to get there, but upon the point of being obliged to remove myself farther, to bury myself in the fields, abandoning the hope of passing so soon the Firth. The reflection of retreating, in place of advancing, agitated my mind cruelly, and plunged me into an unsupportable chagrin.

M. Seton, the younger brother of my friend, a young man of eighteen years, who had made several voyages to sea, seeing my distress and touched with my situation, offered generously to take an oar with Cousselnaine to cross the Firth, which from Dubbyside to Leith is about three leagues broad. I received the obliging offer with thanks, and in the meantime with the good intention of profiting by it, my position excluding ceremonies, all his family set themselves immediately after him to fortify his good and generous resolution, and we agreed to depart about nine o'clock in the evening.

All seemed to bid fair, and the passage of the Firth, which had cost me pains and sighs, then appeared to me certain. How fortune sports itself continually by throwing obstacles in the way of it! The noise which Seton and Cousselnaine made by launching the boat into the water, alarmed the inhabitants of the village who were not yet gone to bed. The

ve fol-

ble to

r that

ment,

o quit refuge

urn to before

ent to d told

unable

leplorred all

oint of

self in

Firth.

citated

rtable

g man

a, see-

gene-Firth,

proad.

mean-

sition mme-

ution, bg.

which

rtain. des in

naine l the

The

cry spread amongst them immediately that it was a rebel who wished to save himself, and Seton and Cousselnaine were very very fortunate to escape the hubbub, without being known. I was furious on understanding this vexatious mishap. I durst say nothing to Seton, as it was by an effort of goodness on his part that he had moved in my favour, but I redoubled all my rage on Cousselnaine. I reproached him sharply for his folly and stupidity in having made a noise in launching the boat into the water, and I scolded him like a nigger. In the meantime, notwithstanding this unlucky occurrence, I was quite decided to continue my enterprise, determined to be present to command myself the manœuvre, and by a fortunate stubborness, the more they represented to me the obstacles for that evening, the more determined I was to make another attempt. M. Seton and all his family entreated me with clasped hands to defer it till next day, alleging that the inhabitants being alarmed would be on the watch all the night and that it was morally impossible it could succeed. I replied that it was useless to speak to me of it, my resolution being taken most decidedly. The more certainly that I might take the passage this night, I embarked along with an oar in each hand, committing myself thus to Providence, and I would undertake it however extravagant was the prospect, so much was I intent on leaving, provoked at not having been able to find one single honest man among the fishers to join Cousselnaine to save my life, and without any prospect of succeeding better in it in the end.

An unshaken firmness in my resolutions was always very useful to me. I made many reflections before determining on the course I should choose, examining impartially the pros and cons of all that ought naturally to result from them, but once decided no person was ever able to make me waver in my resolutions, even in those cases in which there was no other alternative but either to succeed or perish, and although every one should be against my opinion, in which I

th

th

 $\mathbf{r}e$

te

bo

sin

an he

of

fol

im

the

in

W

qu

int

th

co ea

yo

fre

Se

wl

be

ref

fre

me

en

on

ob

of

always was well founded. Obstinacy becomes a fault in general of character, notwithstanding every one's right to comprehend his own affairs better than any one else, and being the principal interested, the mind works and exercises itself to most advantage to discover the resources, thus if one is endowed with good sense and discernment one conducts his own affairs himself better than by the counsels of others, who do not avail themselves of their doubts which render us wavering in our opinions, and make us often deviate from the right. I warned Cousselnaine to hold himself ready by ten o'clock, wishing still to make an attempt,* and I gave him some money to buy refreshments of which he would have need in crossing.

Cousselnaine returned at the exact hour, but so intoxicated, that with difficulty was he able to hold his feet, having well employed an hour all the more that he was absent. Everything was against me. I swore, I blustered, but I gained nothing by it. I replied to all the repeated solicitations that they made me to desist, that Cousselnaine being necessary to bring back the boat, he should sleep, and so conduct himself during the crossing, while that I sailed with M. Seton, and that that would be all the inconvenience; that I should depart that night most decidedly. I took Cousselnaine on my back and laid him down all his length in the bottom of the boat; I launched the boat into the vater with the assistance of M. Seton without making any noise, and at length, each taking an oar, we set ourselves to row with all our strength. As soon as we were distant about fifty paces from

^{*} It fares better that one is quick and precipitate than frightened; for fortune is a lady, says Machiaveli, whom one ought to brand and keep in subjection; and it is seen every day that she allows herself to be governed by those who are quick and assiduous rather than by those who are cold and phlegmatic in their movements; therefore, as a lady, she is always loved by those who are young; because, being less circumspect, they attack her with more safety and boldness. Chapter xxv., page 234, Edition de Londres, en Anglais.

the land, not to be more plagued by the inhabitants, I began then to breathe, and feel my heart rebound as if it had been relieved of a great burden.

There arose an east wind which agitated the sea greatly, and our little boat danced horribly. Seton was in great terror, and it was well-founded, for a wave breaking over the boat would have filled it with water sufficient to cause it to sink to the bottom. I always encouraged him; though in any other situation I would have been as much in terror as he was, as we were at every billow in the greatest danger of being engulphed. But I then feared nothing but the scaffold, and any other peril could not make upon me a strong impression. We were still in danger, to encounter besides the wind and the waves, the drunken Cousselnaine extended in the bottom of the boat, wishing at every moment to rise, wanting to return; and we were obliged, to make him remain quiet, to tie his feet together, and to threaten to throw him into the sea at the least movement he should make further, the only means to make him understand reason. Seton and I having rowed like galley slaves, we landed happily on a coast towards six o'clock in the morning, a league and a half east from Edinburgh. The Firth widening in proportion as you advance to the cast, the passage which we made was from four to five leagues. I embraced tenderly the young Seton, and thanked him heartily for the essential services which he had rendered me; and I gave to Cousselnaine, who began somewhat to come to himself, a gratification much beyond his expectations. They re-embarked immediately to return to Dubbyside, while I quickly hastened at a distance from the sea-shore, fearing that some countryman might see me set foot on land. I do not believe that any one could enjoy a more perfect felicity than that which I experienced on my landing, having then surmounted the most formidable obstacles to my escape; above all, the passage of both arms of the sea, which had cost me so many pains, anxieties, and

lt in at to and reises

f one ducts thers, er us from

ly by e him have

atoxiaving osent. out I colici-

being
conh M.
hat I
ssel-

n the with id at I our

from

ened; l and to be e who she is spect, 234,

sighs, to be able to clear them by the crosses which I there continually encountered. Actually I found myself within reach of succour, and the aid of my parents and friends. Notwithstanding, it was not without many pains and difficulties that I had arrived at that goal. I had my hands almost in the same state as were my feet ten days before, bleeding much, and prodigiously inflamed; but I consoled myself easily to be for some time disabled in my hands, not having so much use for them then as for my feet, which began to be pretty well restored. Having landed at a place within gunshot of the field of battle of Gladsmuir, (Prestonpans), where we gained that brilliant victory over the English army, and not daring to approach Edinburgh till towards nightfall, I determined to pass the whole interval upon the field of battle, in order to tranquilise my mind, and soften a little the rigours of our lot by reflections on the past. One enjoys agreeable objects; the sorrowful are to be reflected on, the happy man reasons little. It is only him that suffers who meditates to find at least useful recollections in the evils which surround him. Misfortune, the great master of men, renders them more prudent and wiser. Adversity chills the spirit; the repeated shocks of misfortune oblige even frivolity to reflect. Travelling the whole day on the field of battle, this place presented to me a very striking example of the vicissitudes of fortune to which human nature is liable; and I compared my situation then, in that glorious campaignexecuting the functions of aide-de-camp to the Prince, carrying through all his orders, charged with three hundred English prisoners,—with my condition since, covered with rags to save me from the scaffold; overwhelmed with pains and misery; happy only in the hope of escaping into some foreign country, abandoning for ever my native land, my friends, and my parents; uncertain in what State I might find an asylum, or where I might obtain the means of subsistence. What a different lot! I thought that Providence had

ha in la W m gu pe re an the thi act hir to and in nes nev occ wh

le

shall make position of or fance ignorable thou all his portional bowshim

Outi

and

here

ithin

ends.

diffi-

ands

fore,

 soled

, not

hich

place

ston-

glish

vards

n the

ten a

One

ected

uffers

evils

men,

ls the

volity attle,

f the

and

gn-

arry-

idred

with

pains

some

, my

night

bsis-

had

led me to land upon the fields of Gladsmuir (Prestonpans), having been driven to the east by the ebbing tide, rather than in the neighbourhood of Leith, where we had the intention of landing, in order to impress vividly on my mind lessons which would never be effaced. How I desired to see at that moment some of the favourites of the Prince, whose distinguished favour had rendered them insolent, proud, and impertinent! I imagined I saw those vile, low, and fawning reptiles in the charge of our affairs. I have seen them since, and I was not deceived in my conjectures of them, finding them such as I had believed.* How important it is for man through the instability of fortune to preserve an equal character; not to be elated in prosperity, and always to conduct himself with modesty and humility are the sure means not to be cast down, nor to become mean in adversity. Pride and vanity indicate infallibly a littleness of soul, never failing in the reverses of fortune to degenerate into outrageous meanness; but a modest man, mild, honest, and well-doing, will never be in that situation, whatever revulsion is possible to occur in his fortune; and from whatever elevation from which he may fall, his fall will be lightened by the esteem and general regret of people of sensibility; and having the

^{*} If we reflect upon the miserable state of man, it appears to me that we shall know little that he has of which to be proud and insolent. "Not to make mention," says Wollaston, "of evils, hunger, thirst, heat, cold, the indispositions to which the constitutions of the universe renders us subject, one generation falls as a dead leaf, another remains to fall in the same manner, and to be for ever forgotten. As we issue forth from the midst of the griefs of our mothers, we are immediately after hunted by those of our own. Infancy and youth glide away in insensibility, in trifles, and in vanity or in ignorance. If a man arrives at last to old age, over a thousand cares, a thousand fatigues, and a thousand different adventures, he then feels that all his inconveniences are augmented, and he finds himself less able to support them, &c. In the meantime his wants and infirmities rush in crowds, and under this new accumulation he becomes melancholy, blind, tottering, bowed down till from this he makes in the end some false steps, which sends him to the tomb, where he remains insensible to decay and weakness,"-Outline of Natural Religion, Edition in 4to, Page 344.

public voice in his favour, he is happy, he sees the whole world rejoicing in his good fortune, and in his misfortune every one running to solace him; and disgrace is honourable for him who brings along with him the regrets of anation whom he has faithfully served. Moderation of conduct is a virtue which has its source in tranquillity of mind. When one represses the fierceness of the passions, when one accustoms one's self to look in the face coolly all the accidents of life, when one keeps one's self always on his guard against every troublesome impression, when he gives himself leisure to weigh everything, to balance everything, he will enjoy that tranquillity of mind of which moderation in all things will be the fruit. A man of true merit will see with the same eyes his rise and his fall, immovable in adversity as a rock battered by all the fury of the waves in a tempest.

0

n

fa

I

 \mathbf{B}

k

sl

m

00

co

CE

he

ba

he

ar

no

In perambulating these places, I recalled at every step all the particulars of the battle; and when I found myself at the place where I had seen three hundred English soldiers prisoners, guarded by twenty-four Highlanders, I sat myself down to dine upon my bread and cheese, with a bottle of Madeira wine which M. Seton had made me accept of at parting. The remembrance of the glorious and inconceivable victory we had gained on those fields added once more to the extreme pleasure which I felt at having passed the Firth. As I feared to be recognized if I went straight to Edinburgh, I decided to seek a refuge at Leith, at the house of my old governess, Madame Blythe, who was for twenty-three years in my mother's service, and charged particularly with the care of me—having taken the office of my nurse from the age of one year. The troubles and the chagrin which I had continually occasioned her, as much by the dangerous disith which my childhood was overwhelmed, as by the passionate, and thoughtless character which an only son is prone to display, served only to call forth more of her tenderness and affection for me; as much as if I had

hole

une

ourof a

connind.

one

ents

ainst

isure

enjoy

hings a the

as a

ep all

at the

s pri-

nyself

tle of

of at

ivable

to the

Firth.

ourgh, ay old

years h the

m the

I had

s dis-

y the

only

re of

I had

been her own child. M. Blythe, captain of a small smuggling vessel, who was very rich, found her all to his taste at fifty years of age. He proposed marriage to her, and the proposal was too advantageous for Margaret to waver at his proposition. It was three years since she had gone to live at Leith with her husband, and they lived together in much harmony. Blythe was a Calvinist, an outrageous enemy to the House of Stuart, but too honest a man to have anything to fear at his house, so I quitted the field of Gladsmuir (Prestonpans), before the sun went down, to arrive at his house before the night should close in. On entering the house of Madame Blythe, I believed that this good woman would have smothered me with caresses. She leapt upon my neck, took me in her arms, and shed a torrent of tears of joy. As no one of my family knew that I was arrived, or whether I was dead or alive, or killed at the Battle of Culloden—my brother-in-law, Rollo, having kept them in ignorance that he had seen me at Banff—as soon as the first transports of this good woman were past, I beseeched her most instantly to go quickly to Edinburgh to inform my father and mother that I was in her house in perfect health. I had as much impatience to give them my news, as Madame Blythe would have to relieve their anxieties and pains by their knowledge that I was safe. During her absence, M. Blythe showed me all the concealments which he had caused to be made in the partition of his chamber for putting there in his contraband goods which he obtained in his voyages to distant countries; "in short," he said to me, "to put you in there in case of a surprise, and when any one comes to search my house." I answered him that I was become the most contraband and the most dangerous goods he had ever had in his house, and that these concealments might very well not be any longer useless, although he had reckoned for a long time not to have any more need of them.

My impatience to give my father my news had made me

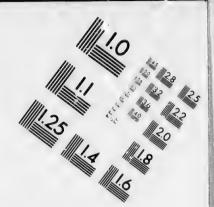
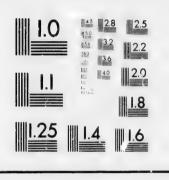


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503



forget to tell Madame Blythe to bring me clothes; but I had the joy and satisfaction of seeing her return, to find that she was charged with all that was necessary for me. In fact it was time to lay aside my tatterdemalions; for, besides other inconveniences that I sustained from my disguise, I perceived that these habits had given me torture. But as that vile disease had not made further progress, I was relieved of it at the end of twenty-four hours, by rubbing all my body with fresh butter and brimstone, and taking flowers of sulphur inwardly. These beggarly garments had been very useful to me for about six weeks that I had worn them: in the meantime I had an inconceivable pleasure in discarding them, and at not being obliged any longer to disguise myself in rags. My father sent me word that he would come the next morning to pass the day with me.

Although I desired earnestly to embrace my father, not having seen him since the month of October that our army left Edinburg's to enter England, I dreaded, nevertheless, his presence, on account of the reproaches which he might make me on account of having joined Prince Edward without his consent, and for being involved by my own fault in the miserable plight into which I was plunged. As soon as it was known at Edinburgh that the Prince had landed in the Highlands of Scotland, impressed with having the merit of being among the first that should place themselves under his orders, and who should attach their fortunes to his, I beseeched him with clasped hands to grant me permission to depart immediately to join him. But, far from agreeing to it, he ordered me expressly not to think of it, telling me that it would be time enough to join the Prince when he should be in possession of Edinburgh; that not being able to procure passports, his principles and attachment to the House of Stuart being known to all the world, I would expose myself to be arrested on presenting myself to cross the Firth, and be kept in prison during the whole expedition of the Prince. It

was without effect that I represented to him that the Prince had she would regard me more favourably by attaching myself to his ct it lot at the commencement of his enterprise, not having more ther than some hundred men in his suite, than when these formideived able obstacles were past, and not having more to do but be vile crowned when he should be in possession of the capital of his ancient kingdom of Scotland. In effect, I looked him in the it at with face as to this, but I was grossly deceived. My father would phur not allow himself to bend, and in the end imposed silence ul to upon me. Burning with desire to depart, I went next day to dinner at my Lady Jean Douglas's, sister to the Duke of eanand Douglas, who had always been my protectress in my infancy, expressly for the purpose of recounting to her my grievances, rags. and the conversation which I had had with my father. This ornworthy lady approved of my reasons, counselling that I should depart immediately without consulting my father any , not more, and undertaking to appease him in case he should be army s, his in a rage at my disobedience. This was all that I could demake sire, entirely conforming to my wishes, and I went off next it his day in the morning without saying anything to any one. I iserfound no difficulty in passing the Firth between Queensferry and Dunfermline; having put a black cockade in my hat, was ligh-I entered briskly into the wherry, with an air of authority, being saying to those who examined the passports that I was an ders. officer of the Regiment of Lee, then in quarters at Edinburgh, him and that officers had no need of passports. On leaving the imboat I took the road to the castle of my Lord Rollo, where I t, he remained for two days, waiting his arrival from Perth, which at it is twelve miles from it. When I reappeared at Edinburgh, ld be some time after with our army, my father said nothing to me cure for having departed without his consent, but then we were e of victorious and triumphant! Presently all had changed face, yself and those who had loaded us with praises in our prosperity d be treated us in our disasters as rash young men. It is the cus-

tom of the greatest part of the world not to judge of things

. It

but by their success. If we had been successful in placing the crown on the head of Prince Edward, as there was even a great probability during some time of doing so, by conducting ourselves well after our victories, we would have all been celebrated in heroics. The loss of the Battle of Culloden, which ended the dispute between the Houses of Stuart and Hanover, rendered us immediately rebels and fools in the eyes of those who do not reflect, of which, unfortunately, that is the majority.

My father came, but the good old man in place of abusing me was so much affected by seeing me again that the tears rushed at once into his eyes, and clasping me in his arms, he was some time without being able to speak. As soon as we both were somewhat composed after this scene of mutual tenderness, I amused him with a recital of all the particulars of our expedition since our departure from Edinburgh to enter England, and of all that had happened to myself personally since the Battle of Culloden. He kept me company till nine o'clock at night, and the time passed as if it had been lightning. I was penetrated with affliction on learning that my mother was very unwell, and that she had kept her chamber for a long time; and I was still more so when Madame Blythe told me that it was anxiety on my account which was the cause of her illness, and that the physicians considered her in danger. My grief was deep and natural! She had always adored me with the affection of the most tender of mothers. I proposed to my father many plans for going to see her, but ne forbade me to think of it, telling me that I ran the risk of being recognised, and that if, unfortunately, they should make me a prisoner, I should cause them both to die of grief; so I did not insist further at that time. What a cruel situation!—to be so near my mother whom I had cause to love most tenderly, and not to have it in my power to embrace her!

Leith, which is a mile from Edinburgh, being then full of

troops of the Hessians and English Regiments who waited there to embark on their return to Flanders, two English serjeants came to the house of M. Blythe with billets for lodgings. This was a most terrible disarrangement for me! Meantime, M. Blythe fortunately found means to exempt us, and they went off. During an hour that these serjeants remained in the house to battle with Blythe to lodge them there, I was acting as sentinel to observe them through a hole which I had pierced across the partition which divided the rooms, with the door of the hiding place open, to allow me to rush into it, in case that I should see that it was their design to search the house for rebels. I perceived poor Madama Blythe changing colour at every instant, trembling as in a fever, and I feared greatly that her anxieties might create suspicion to the serjeants that she had some rebel concealed in her house, but I was relieved from fear.

They came to inform me that Lady Jean Douglas was coming to see me *incognito* the next day after mid-day, accompanied by M. Stuart, her husband, who was in her suite, and another lady of my family.* This worthy and virtuous

* M. the Duke of Douglas, brother of my Lady Jean Douglas, is one of the most ancient and illustrious houses of Europe, and who have disputed during many ages the Crown of Scotland against the House of Stuart. John Baliol had two daughters, the eldest of whom was married to the Earl of Douglas, and the other to Robert the Bruce, one of the greatest men that Scotland ever produced, and who delivered his country when the English had almost entirely made a conquest of that kingdom. Robert the Bruce succeeded to the Crown of Scotland at the death of John Baliol, in proference to the House of Douglas, one does not know why, and he had only one daughter, who was married to the Steward of Scotland, which signifies, in the Scottish language, Stuart, who succeeded by his wife to the kingdom of Robert de Bruce. The House of Stuart was but little known in the History of Scotland previously to this epoch, which saw them all at once sovereigns. The House of Douglas always disputed their right to the throne, and William the Eighth Earl of Douglas, having more than half the kingdom on his side by a confederation which he had formed against James II., this King demanded an interview with him in the Castle of Stirling, and sent Earl Douglas a safe conduct. The Earl, too credulous, confiding in the promises of the King, and under the safe conduct which he had

n full of

acing

even

duct-

been

oden.

t and

n the

ately,

using

tears

ns, he

as we

al ten-

ars of

enter

onally

ll nine

atning.

mother r for a

he told

cause

her in

always

others.

ier, but

risk of

should

f grief;

a cruel

to love

embrace

lady, Lady Jean Douglas, was the idol of her country, endowed with all the good and amiable qualities that could adorn her sex. She was loved, respected, and adored by all that had the advantage of knowing her, and was equally so by the

received from James II., passed and sealed by the great Seals of the Realm, exposed himself by going to visit the King in the Castle of Stirling, where he then resided. The king having pressed the Earl of Douglas to break the bond without his being willing to consent to it, drew his poinard and said to him, "If you do not choose to do it, this shall break it," plunging at the same time his dagger into the heart of the Earl of Douglas. The vassals of the Earl running to arms, and dragging at the tail of a horse, the safe conduct which the King had given him and violated, they burned the town of Stirling, and threatened to besiege the Castle where the King The King and the new Earl of Douglas encountered each other at Aberdeen at the head of their armies; this Earl of Douglas having a greatly superior army in number and valour to that of the King. "Thus," says Robertson in his history of Mary Stuart, from which I take this note, "one single battle ought to have decided whether the Stuarts or the Douglasses should possess the Crown of Scotland; but while the troops of the Earl of Douglas waited with impatience the signal to engage, the Earl ordered them to retreat. The army of the Earl of Douglas dispersed themselves that night. Convinced of his want of skill to profit by an opportunity, or his want of coarage to seize a Crown, the Earl, despised by everybody, was chased out of the kingdom, and this House, which had been so long the rival and terror of the Crown, strengthened for some time the King." The Duke of Douglas and Lady Jean Douglas were the descendants of John Baliol by his daughter. The archives of this illustrious house prove their descent from Sholto Douglas, the founder of that house, who received from Solvothius, King of Scotland, in 770 the Earldom of Douglas, in recompense for his valour and his success in the war which Solvothius had to wage against Donald, King of the Isles.

I have some drops of Royal blood in my veins through the House of Douglas, my grandmother having been the daughter by lawful wedlock of Douglas, Baron of Whittingeme, a branch of the House of the Duke of Douglas; and since that the branch of Whittingeme is sprung from the House of Douglas, one of the ancestors of my grand-uncle, Douglas of Whittingeme, was married to Annabel Stuart, sister of James I., King of Scotland; and my grandmother was descended from that Annabel Stuart by lawful wedlock. My father gave me, when parting, a genealogy of this family, which was taken from the Registers of Scotland, and signed by the Chancellor for my grand-uncle, William, Baron of Whittingeme, Lieutenant-General in the service of Gustavus Adolphus, which I have still preserved.

t]

a

d

si N

n

iı

n

h

lowed n her at had y the

of the tirling. glas to ooinard plungouglas. horse, burnede King ther at greatly ," says , "one glasses Earl of d them es that or his ly, was

ong the
The
John
the
form
mpense
wage

ouse of lock of uke of om the Whit-f Scotuart by of this by the tenant-ryed.

public, who did not know her but as one of the finest characters and good reputations that ever a woman possessed. She had been in her youth very beautiful, and she still was so at fortyfive years of age, concealing at least five years of her age by the uniform, temperate, regular, frugal, and simple life she had always led. She was virtuous, pious, devout, charitable, without ostentation; and her devotion never was affected nor obtrusive; her affability, her easy politeness, her goodness, her engaging, genteel, and prepossessing manners, effaced in an instant the embarrassment of those who paid their court to her, whom her air, full of grace and dignity, had affected and rendered timid. She had a mind much adorned with literature, loved reading with a decided taste, having a great memory, much good sense and spirit, a sound judgment, and a nice discernment, quick and solid. Her library was full of all the best authors. You would not see in it the trash of romances with which the libraries of females are ordinarily She had a soul elevated and noble, lofty and determined on occasions when it was proper to be so, and supporting the dignity of her illustrious birth without pride, without vanity, but in a manner truly great.*

The Duke of Douglas, her brother, was lunatic from his infancy, often committing acts of folly the most terrible. He killed his stepfather, M. Ker, without having ever had any quarrel or altercation with him, by passing his sword through

^{*}The Duke of Douglas, in a rage against my Lady Jean Douglas for having married, in 1746, Mr. Stuart, a plain gentleman, refused to pay her the interest of her patrimony, and reduced her thereby to the most disagreeable embarrassment. She returned from London in 1752, and having caused herself to be presented to King George, she did not humble herself to demand from him a pension. She told him "that her brother having stopped payment of the interest of her fortune, which was in his hands, His Majesty, knowing the family, had certainly too much spirit and good sense not to know what was due to a person of her birth." The King upon the instant caused without delay a considerable pension to be conferred upon my Lady Jean, though he knew that she had been to visit Prince Edward in his Palace at Edinburgh

re

a

fr

a

of

ea

ot:

an

pe

th

gr

th:

an

of

de

Cr

Th Do

an

ser

da

ac

801

cu lik

a g So

tha

spe

his body while he was sleeping; and my Lady Jean having often escaped being assassinated in these moments of lunacy, the Marquis of Lothian, their uncle, wished to have him declared legally lunatic, and to put my Lady Jean in possession of the whole income of his estate, which amounted to four hundred thousand pounds of rent. There would not have been the least difficulty in doing so, the lunacy of the Duke having been known to all the world by the melancholy proofs he had given of it daily; but my Lady Jean would not for a moment hear it spoken of, loving rather to live retired upon seven or eight thousand a year, an income very small for her rank, and who had the interest of her fortune placed in a fund lost in the hands of her brother, rather than dishonour him, as well as his House. If ever virtue was persecuted without ceasing by Providence, it was in the person of my Lady Jean Douglas, the most worthy of her sex, adorable for her eminent qualities and the most perfect modesty to be imitated, whose vexation at the persecutions of her brother, joined to the death of her eldest son, whom she loved tenderly, shortened her days at London, where she died in 175(6), a little time before the death of the Duke, her brother, and at the moment when she would have become the heiress of and enjoyed four hundred thousand pounds a year. I do not exaggerate her character.* All those

LADY JEAN DOUGLAS.

The story of Lady Jean Douglas forms an interesting episode in the history of the Stuarts of Murthly. Her marriage with Colonel Stuart, afterwards head of the House, took place privately in Edinburgh in 1746—the Colonel at that time being fifty, and Lady Jean forty-eight years of age. The marriage was kept secret till after the birth of twin sons, in 1748, when it was intimated to Lady Jean's brother, the Duke of Douglas. The Duke was persuaded that the twins were suppositions, and neither the

^{*}So many references have been made by the Chevalier in these Memoirs to the Lady Jean Douglas, that it may be interesting to my readers to know something of her personal history, and I happily have it in my power to gratify this desire by the following extract from the Red-Book of Grandtully, in two volumes, by William Fraser, Esq., Edinburgh, noticed in the *Scotsman*, June, 1870.

who had the happiness of knowing her and her misfortune regretted her death, said a thousand times more without being able to paint the rare merit of this adorable lady, as illustrious as unfortunate, who merited a better fate, and who was taken from this world at a moment when she was on the eve of a condition the most happy, by the death of her brother. What a mystery of Providence, difficult to comprehend! One might often say with Brutus, "O virtue! I have always adored thee as a true good, but I find thee only a vain shadow." Virtue

earnest appeals of his sister, nor the influence of the Earl of Crawford, and other of their common friends, could shake his opinion. He withdrew all support from his sister, her husband was thrown into jail by his creditors, and she and her children were only saved from starvation by a small pension granted her by the King (George II). Lady Jean received a severe shock from the death of one of her sons in 1753; and already worn out by the anxiety caused by pecuniary embarrassments, and distress at the scandalous imputations cast upon her character by her brother, sank into her grave a few months after. Her old servant and attached friend declared that she died of a broken heart, and nothing else. The Duke of Douglas, after her death, saw reason to repent his judgment, and in 1761 executed an entail of his whole estate in favour of himself and the heirs whomsoever of his body, whom failing the heirs whomsoever of his father. Upon his death, Archibald Stuart, the only surviving son of Lady Jean, was served heir of entail to his uncle, and shortly after obtained a charter from the Crown, of the estates of Douglas, as heir to his uncle, the Duke of Douglas. The Duke of Hamilton, who was the nearest heir male of the Duke of Douglas, brought action of Reduction of the Service of Archibald Stuart, and the "Great Douglas Cause," after occupying the Court of Session for several years, was finally decided by it adversely to Stuart. daunted, Stuart carried the case to the House of Lords, where he obtained a reversal of the decision of the Court below, and had the satisfaction of not only clearing his mother's name from all suspicion, but of acquiring one of the finest properties in Scotland. Mr. Fraser gives a very interesting account of the life of Lady Jean, and the subsequent proceedings of her son, which, if space allowed, would well repay a minute examination. A curious corroboration of the parentage of Archibald Stuart-Douglas was his likeness to the Portrait of "Old Grandfully," which Mr. Fraser says made a great impression on the present proprietor when first introduced to him. So warmly was the case of Lady Jean Douglas's son taken up by the public that on the news of his success arriving in Edinburgh "The Inhabitants spontaneously gave expression to their joy by a general illumination."

lays at
e death
would
ousand
ll those
in these
to my
have it
the Redinburgh,

having

unacy,

im de-

session

ır hun-

een the having

he had

noment even or nk, and

t in the

well as

sing by

las, the

ualities

exation

of her

le in the Stuart, in 1746 years of sons, in Douglas. ither the

does not afford to man a shelter from the scourges of nature or the injuries of fortune.**

f

8

n

fi

O

 \mathbf{B}

80

re

lii

th

CO

as

of

T

sta

ab

sle to

tha

by

to

bu

of

tu

me

 \mathbf{m} q

by

wa

int

 $\mathbf{m}_{\mathbf{0}}$

My Lady Jean Douglas came to see me, as she had sent me word, and she caused me recount to her all my adventures since the Battle of Culloden. When I was at the commencement of my narration, which related to my sojourn at the house of Samuel, my dream immediately came into my memory, which I had almost forgot through the variety of events which had happened to me since my departure from Glenprosene; and struck with the realization of this dream

* Wollaston says—"The history of the human race is almost nothing else but a series of sorrowful and frightful events, &c. Among the millions of men who have suffered extremely, it is impossible to imagine that there has not been a great number of sorrows and sufferings that have not exceeded the pleasures which they have enjoyed, without which they would not have been in a condition to evude by their innocence, by their prudence, or by any other means the bitter draughts which they have been made to drink of to the very dregs; viz., that is to say, that the innocent has the portion which most properly belongs but to the criminal and unjust; and those same share the lot which the innocent naturally ought to have. This is one of the arguments in proof of the immortality of the Soul."—Outline of Natural Religion, Edition in 4to, pro. 8, page 344.

It may be interesting also to know that the Portrait of Mary, Queen of Scots, engraved from an original painting in possession of the Grand-tully family, represents her in her widow's dress as Queen Dowager of France, holding in her right hand a Crown and in her left a Crucifix.

We may also mention, as there stated, that the ancestor of Colonel Stuart, who married Lady Jean Douglas, was Walter Fitzalan, the High Steward of Scotland, who married Marjory, daughter of King Robert Bruce, and on the death of her brother, King David II., in 1370, her son obtained the Crown of Scotland and assumed the title of King Robert the Second. The Stewards of Grandtully are descended from Alexander, High Steward of Scotland, fourth in descent from Walter, through his second son, Sir John Stuart of Bankill, whose grandson was the first of the family who possessed Grandtully. He married the daughter of John de Ergadia, Lord of Lorn, and by her had several sons, the eldest of whom married in the Lorn family; the second was ancestor of the Earls of Athole, Buchan, and Traquair; while the fourth, Alexander, was ancestor of the Stuarts of Grandtully. (Alexander died about the year 1449).

nature

ventures nmencen at the nto my ariety of ure from

s dream

st nothing the millions that there we not exthey would prudence, on the made to ent has the ajust; and ave. This -Outline of

ary, Queen the Grandlowager of ifix. of Colonel

the High ng Robert 70, her son Robert the nder, High his second the family le Ergadia, married in le, Buchan, Stuarts of

from point to point, and in all its circumstances, I paused for a moment in my narrative, confounded and stupefied and mute. I hesitated at first whether I should tell it to my Lady Jean, but it appeared to me so supernatural and incredible that I did not dare to make her privy to it, fearing that she might possibly imagine that I was inclined to impose upon her fictions, which I had no need to do to secure the goodwill of one who had honoured me with her kindness from my infancy. Besides, supposing that she should not believe it, which was very probable, I thought that this would show a littleness of soul, endeavouring to catch her or turn her about; so I resumed my narration. It is certain that this dream saved my life, by my advancing with obstinacy and determination to the south, in place of returning to the mountains with my comrades; and I shall remember it as long as I shall live as a thing which I could not comprehend without the power of reasoning upon it, and which surpasses my imagination. This action of the mind during the time that the body is in a state of insensibility, as if dead, is of itself even inconceivable; but when we talk in a dream, and when the actions in sleeping are more than realized in the event, and are verified to the letter, what can one think of it? Can it proceed from a cause purely and simply natural? The effect is positive, that my dream saved me from the scaffold—I being directed by the dream as if an angel had traced the route which I cught to follow, inspiring me with an assurance of arriving at Edinburgh, contrary to good sense and the advice of every one, or of perishing. I have never even recoiled a pace, be it to return to the house of M. Graham when the boatmen deserted me, be it to the house of Lillie when the opportunity by Salmon was not afforded, or the house of M. Seton. Precipitated by I do not know what impulse, without knowing whether it was for my destruction or for my safety, my mind is plunged into a labyrinth when I try to comprehend it-in so much the more as I had not thought of my Lady Jean Douglas on the

day when we took counsel at the house of Samuel—the unanimous result of which was to return to the Highlands; nor for a long time before. I thought no more on going to bed than to obtain a sound sleep, and to arise at three o'clock in the morning to depart with my companions. It seemed to me as if after my dream I was no longer a free agent, and my reflections all the journey on the diffic. ies and insurmountable obstacles which surrounded me on the road to Edinburgh—served only the more strongly to confirm my resolution. Above all, supposing me to be arrived at Edinburgh, could I ever hope there to see my Lady Jean Douglas, and that she would come and pay me a visit at the house of M. Blythe? The whole thing is altogether incomprehensible.*

* M. Voltaire says in regard to dreams, "but how is it, all the senses being dormant in sleep, there is in it a medium which is alive; how is it that your eyes seeing nothing, your ears hearing nothing, in the meantime you both see and hear in your dreams? The dog is at the chase in a dream. &c.: the poet makes verses in sleep; the mathematician figures, &c. Are these the sole organs of the machine which act? Is it the pure soul which yielding to the empire of the senses, rejoices in their bonds being at liberty? If soul organs produce dreams of the night, why do they not produce ideas of the day? If the soul, pure and tranquil in repose of the senses, acts by itself as the sole cause, the sole subject of all ideas which you have in sleeping, why is it that these ideas are always irregular, unreasonable, and incoherent? You must confess that all your ideas come to you in sleep without you and in spite of you. Your will has no part in them. It is then certain that you could think for seven or eight hours on end without having the least desire to think, and without even being sure that you were thinking. Ponder this, and endeavour to divine what it is that the animal is composed of." But what could be more inconceivable a dream, accompanied with such a variety of circumstances, as mine was in the house of Samuel, and all the particulars of that dream verified to the letter two months afterwards. The human mind does not know how to penetrate through these clouds, which conceal all from weak mortals. The fact is true, and happened to me such as I have related it. Would one seek to apprehend the cause; it is so enshrouded, like millions of other causes of which we are unable to know the effects; and the mind is bewildered and plunged into an abyss without being able to arrive at anything, without being able to penetrate into the mysteries of nature, where all is to us obscurity and uncertainty; and one loses one's self there in reflections.

H

el—the dands; to bed lock in d to me and my insurcoad to rm my at Edin-Douglas, e house compre-

the senses how is it meantime a dream, &c. Are soul which at liberty? duce ideas es, acts by re in sleeple, and insleep with. It is then out having vere thinkmal is combanied with amuel, and afterwards. ouds, which me such as it is so ento know the yss without te into the y; and one

Having told my Lady Jean the adventure of the two sergeants the day before, which had so much alarmed poor Madame Blythe, she replied that I was not safe at the house of M. Blythe, and she invited me to come to stay at her house, where I would be in more security, as no one dared lightly to visit her hotel on mere suspicion, bidding me come to it that very evening towards six o'clock, and ordering me to keep on my tatterdemalions during the journeyher hotel being half a-league from Leith to the village of Drumsheugh, the disguise would be absolutely necessary, for fear of meeting any one of my acquaintances. I pleaded all that I could to be allowed to part with my habiliments, which particularly annoyed me. Meanwhile, not daring to say to my Lady Jean that they gave me uneasiness, I was still obliged to wear them to conform to her orders. I took all the precautions possible not to have in the long run this villainous disease a second time, having put on two shirts, a waistcoat, and gloves. In spite of the horror I had of these habits, and which I would have given a great deal to see in flames before my Lady Jean came to see me, they were the most precious that I had ever worn, having greatly contributed to the saving of my life. I arrived at the door of the hotel of my Lady Jean towards one o'clock in the afternoon, which I found wide open, and the gardener who attended me the sole domestic whom she had ventured to let into the secret. He told me that my Lady had ordered him to conduct me into her apartment the moment I arrived, and before I changed my dress—she wishing to see me under my disguise. was further an annoyance to me, for I feared to infest her chamber with a bad smell. Nevertheless, it was necessary that I should submit to it. I found M. Stuart and a lady of my family at the house of my Lady Jean, who attended to see my metamorphosis; they all found me quite unrecognisable. My Lady told me that there was nothing wanting for my adjustment but to have my eyebrows blackened with charcoal. I engaged in it immediately, and in reality this changed me again considerably. I took leave at midnight, and was conducted by the gardener to the chamber which was destined for me, where no person had been lodged for a long time before, and which was below the summer-house. I went to work immediately by taking off my tatterdemalions, habiliments which I begged the gardener to burn in the garden in order that I might never hear of them any more spoken of, and have nothing more to fear that it would be necessary for me to put them on again.

No person in the house of my Lady Jean being aware of the secret except the gardener, at the same time that they all knew that nobody lodged in the chamber that I occupied, not to make any noise, which would have necessarily discovered me to the domestics, I was obliged not to put on my shoes till one o'clock in the morning, that they were in bed, and I then descended to the garden, where I walked till two o'clock in the morning. I soon accustomed myself to this sedentary and solitary life, seldom seeing anybody but the gardener, who brought me my food. Sometimes I had the felicity of going down to the apartment of my Lady Jean, where I generally found M. Stuart, to pass a couple of hours at night; but this was rarely, on account of the embarrassment and difficulty of escaping all the domestics, above all her chambermaid, Mrs. Ker, who my Lady did not wish should know the secret, and who came very inopportunely by curiosity to find out some mystery which she had often occasion to suspect in the house, but without knowing what to make of it. I immediately acquired a taste for reading, having had till then too much dissipation for me to apply myself to it, and my Lady gave me the best historical authors. Thus I passed all my time with a book continually in my hand, without feeling myself an instant alone; and I would have consented to pass all my life in the same condition to have escaped the scaffold. The taste which I then acquired for reading has been very useful to me in the end, and a great resource against *ennui* in the countries where I dwelt many years in America, where society has not the same agreeableness as in Europe.

this

aight,

which

for a

house.

alions,

in the

more

uld be

vare of

hey all

ied, not

covered

hoes till

and I

o'clock

edentary

ardener,

elicity of

where I

at night;

nent and

chamber-

ld know

curiosity

occasion

to make

aving had

self to it,

my hand,

ould have

n to have

quired for

Thus I

A few days after I was installed in the House of my Lady Jean Douglas, I read in the Edinburgh Gazette "That the populace at Dubbyside had arrested and conducted to prison one named David Cousselnaine, who with another certain person who saved himself, had aided a rebel to effect his escape, and that they had burnt the boat which they had used for crossing the Frith." I was charmed that the poor, generous Seton had had the good fortune to save himself. I felt the greatest regret possible that M. Robertson had lost his boat. But as to Cousselnaine (my hand not being yet whole), I could not lament so much his fate as I would have done had he remained sober; for, but for his debauch, he would have been able to have returned to Dubbyside at an earlier hour, and being in a condition to waken us, we would have made the passage in less time, and to all appearance he would have avoided being taken, being able to return before the inhabitants were up. I raved as any one who sought to save his life, knowing but little of the business, but with Cousselnaine we would have had more than double the speed. M. Seton, the elder, whom I met again at Paris in 1747, told me that Cousselaine was discharged from prison after some weeks, they not having been able to find any evidence against him; and in truth it would have been a great wrong to have condemned him for having saved a rebel, for the animal had no part in it, having done nothing but sleep during the whole passage, while I was fatigued to death by the force of rowing, and lamed my hands so as not to be able to avail myself of them for some time.

My Lady Jean Douglas and my father gave me their advice that I should go to London, not running the risk of being known in that great city, where an infinite number of

strangers arrive and depart every day, nor more than in the road going there when I should be distant ten leagues All was prepared for my departure, from Edinburgh. when we learnt that a squadron of the Duke D'Anville had left France, and that it was so formidable that Admiral Anson had not dared to attack it. Nobody in Scotland doubted at first that this squadron was destined to retrieve the affairs of Prince Edward, and the secret course which she took in departing confirmed everybody still more in this belief. It is not doubted that this squadron would have been able to effect a landing in Scotland without meeting there the slightest opposition, and in the face even of the English troops, who would not have dared to attack them; and the troops which were on board would have been more than sufficient to have retrieved our affairs. The Scotch still concealed in the Highlands would have rushed like a hive of bees; and many of the clans who had remained neutral, seeing that the Duke of Cumberland had ravaged and sacked their country, without distinction of friend or foe, the army of the Prince would have immediately been more than double the number in the time we were the most numerous: our army never having exceeded eight thousand men. After having waited with extreme impatience the landing of this squadron in Scotland, which occupied the attention of everybody for many weeks, in the end an English barque discovered this squadron in a latitude which left no doubt but that she was destined for America. The fate of this powerful fleet was to perish on the coast of Acadia, without ever effecting an establishment, the object of that armament, at Chibouctou, a paltry town in a most wretched place, full of rocks and stones, which has been cotonized since by the English under the name of Halifax. This immense armament, which would have easily effected a revolution in England in the moment of the crisis when we were in Scotland, was reduced to nothing by tempests, by diseases, by ani-

F

h

n

a

p

E

tl

la

p:

hi

th

fo

cc

to

ea

or

av

ne

 $^{\mathrm{th}}$

wi

di

for

to

of

ı in

gues

ture,

ville

miral tland

rieve

vhich re in

have

eting f the

them;

more

Scotch

l like nained

ed and

be, the

erous:

After

of this

every-

ae dis-

bt but

power-

it ever ent, at

full of

by the

arma-

n Eng-

otland,

y ani-

mosities and disorders between the general officers of the sea and those of the land; in fine, by a total mismanagement of conduct; in so much that it is related in France, that very little of the wreck of this formidable squadron escaped, without having effected the projected establishment of Chibouctou, and that the expedition was the last attempt of the French marine. It is a very bad policy—the menaces which they have used for an age against the English, with respect to the House of Stuart, and which could not last for ever. has been used by so long a practice that the English are no more alarmed at it, and they will never take advantage of it, as they see to-day that France, with the best dispositions possible, is incapable of effecting anything in favour of the House of Stuart, by the destruction and transmigration of their Scotch partisans, and by the coldness of those of England, and of which we have seen proof in the last war-these pretended invasions not having anything of concert, have not hindered the English from following all their enterprises; and they have not answered any purpose but to open their eyes to form and discipline a hundred thousand militia to guard their coasts from surprise. If France had been seriously disposed to establish the House of Stuart on the throne, she could have easily accomplished it during our expedition with only three or four thousand troops: and, moreover, with an ally which she would have had in Prince Edward, she would have avoided those eternal wars with England, which would have never happened during the reign of the House of Stuart; on the contrary, they would have seen Charles II. ally himself with France in making war on Holland, in spite of the good disposition which the English nation had always entertained for that republic. The king of England had it in his power to make these alliances, to declare war or to avoid it whenever he pleased, and he was always sure to have the majority of parliament.

After a sojourn of two months, tranquilly and so philo-

phically, in the house of my Lady Jean Douglas, one of her servants, who returned from Edinburgh with provisions, recounted in the kitchen to the other domestics, that while she was purchasing meat at the butcher's, the lackey of an Englishman, an officer of the customs, whispered in her ear, "that he knew very well whom she had concealed in the house of her mistress, Lady Jean Douglas, and that they could easily go at the first moment to search her hotel." She added that she had contradicted loudly this calumny. In fact, she could very well contradict it in good faith-there being no one but the gardener who knew that I was in the house; and he came up in an instant to acquaint my Lady Jean, who came on the spur of the moment into my chamber with M. Stuart. to consult upon that which was to be done, fearing that a detachment of troops might come in the course of the day to visit her hotel, and it was then but nine o'clock in the morning.

I was penetrated with sorrow and vexation; I trembled with fear, lest the extreme goodness of my Lady Jean in giving me an asylum at her house might involve her in a bad affair with the government; and I would have rather had a thousand times more distresses, and consequent troubles, than that should happen to her, she having taken me into her house as if it had been my own. I expressed to her my regrets for the risk I had exposed her to. She answered me with her usual vivacity and promptitude of manner, "My child, if there were no risk in it, you would be under no obligation for it." I could not depart by the hall door on account of the domestics, who would see me from the kitchen; and having searched all the house without finding any place where I could conceal myself, as they were then making hay in a park belonging to my Lady Jean, M. Stuart proposed to me to conceal myself in a stack of hay. For this operation it became necessary to let a lackey into the secret, in order to remain a sentinel on the other domestics, and for us to embrace a favourable moment to depart from the house to enter the park.

I departed in a jacket with the lackey and gardener, and followed by M. Stuart. As there had to be a great many precautions to take on account of some windows in the village which overlooked the park, we commenced to make all the colls of hay, one after the other; then the lackey and the gardener threw themselves, one after the other, on the hay—heaping it upon that which was on the ground. This feint having lasted some minutes, I threw myself at full length as if in continuation of the same sport, and they threw over me the hay till that stack in which I was concealed was built of the same height as the others, leaving therein only a small opening for me to breathe by; and they handed to me a bottle of water, and another of wine, then they retired.

I did not believe that it was possible to suffer more than I had done throughout the day. It was very fine weather, but very hot; and the excessive heat in the stack made me almost lose my breath, being as in an oven, ready at every moment to be suffocated. M. Stuart came to see me from time to time to console me, preaching patience to me. I had veritably need; and there were moments that I suffered so cruelly that I was tempted to throw the hay to the devil, and expose myself rather to all that could happen; but considerations alone for my Lady Jean Douglas restrained me. the most terrible sufferings from ten o'clock in the morning till nine at night, always in the same attitude, without the power to stir, and pouring in sweat, they came at last to relieve me at night-fall. When I came out of the stack of hay, I felt my body bruised, and was so weak from the perspiration that it was with difficulty that I could walk, by leaning on the arm of M. Stuart. Scarcely could I support myself on my legs. I was enraged at having passed so terrible and cruel a time to no purpose—nobody having come to visit the house. I was always of opinion that they durst not

hat a dene day to s in the trembled Jean in in a bad er had a bles, than her house egrets for with her child, if gation for nt of the d having where I hay in a

sed to me

peration it

order to

us to em-

of her

ions, re-

hile she

an Eng-

ar, "that

house of

ld easily

ded that

he could

one but

and he

ho came

[. Stuart,

do so upon such an ill-founded information, and they could have had none certain and positive but through the gardener, whose fidelity my Lady Jean had known for the long time that she had had him in her employment.

In the certainty that the squadron of the Duke d' Anville was not destined for Scotland, my hopes of re-establishing our affairs vanished into smoke; and my sufferings during all the time of my being in the stack of hay quite determined me to depart for London sooner; and my departure being fixed for the next day, M. Colville, man of business of my Lady Jean, brought me next day for my journey on the road a very fine nag, very much to be relied on. I beseeched my Lady Jean very earnestly to exempt me from a second penance in the stack of hay any time that I should have the honour of again staying at her house, adding that I would have stood as a sentinel at the windows of my chamber from morning till evening, with my eyes constantly fixed on the door of the court; and as soon as I should have seen a detachment enter, if they had had the boldness to come into it, I should have jumped from one of the windows of the first floor to the garden, and straightway passing over the wall of the garden, should have been in the open fields, and under shelter from their pursuit. This dear and amiable lady lamented my sufferings in the stack of hay, but at the same time burst out into a great roar of laughter, seeing the terrible panic I was in for fear of returning into it, and she dispensed with it. It is true that I had had a rough proof of this terrible punishment.

My father came to bid me an eternal adieu, and remained with me till after mid-day. I was vividly overwhelmed with melancholy and affliction at the approach of a separation for ever. I insisted greatly with him, as well as with my Lady Jean Douglas, to permit me to go for an instant to Edinburgh in order to embrace, for the last time, the most tender of mothers, in her bed-ridden dangerous disease; but they would not consent to it, seeing the danger to which I would expose

could dener, g time

Anville
ing our
ing all
ned me
ig fixed
y Lady
l a very
y Lady
benance
honour

re stood

norning door of achment I should or to the garden, er from ated my urst out c I was

it. It is ishment. emained whelmed paration with my to Edinender of by would

expose

myself of being recognised, whether in going through the town, or by the servants of the house. So I was obliged to submit myself, and not to speak of it any more, although I would have exposed my life a thousand times to see her again. Deplorable situation! To be within a quarter of a league of a tender sick mother, who had always been dear to me, and not to have it in my power to bid her an eternal adieu.

I began to disguise myself towards eleven o'clock at night, as one of those merchants who travel through the country, and they furnished me with a profusion of handkerchiefs which I put into my portmanteau with my linens, where I had likewise the breasts of an embroidered vest, which was very beautiful, and very precious, being the work of a lady. Having turned up my hair, I put on a black periwig which floated upon my shoulders, and my Lady Jean had blackened my moustaches for me; but in spite of this disguise I was not so unrecognisable as with my tatterde-This dear Lady, anxious to know that I was distant some leagues from Edinburgh without accidents, where I would not be so exposed to meet my acquaintances as in the environs of that city, sent her lackey upon her saddle horse to conduct me the two first leagues, in order to be informed of my debut.

I made out six leagues without stopping, finding then a village in which there was a public house, and I set my foot to the ground for the purpose of resting myself there, and having so acthing to eat. The landlady begged me earnestly to agree to join myself to a gentleman in the other room, who had just also arrived, so as to dine together. I agreed to it, suspecting that she had not accommodation to serve us separately. I was confounded on entering the room to find M. Scott, banker, from Edinburgh, a young gentleman, who knew me very well by sight. This was an encounter the more perplexing in as much as he was an out and out parti-

san of the House of Hanover. The mistake made, there was no time for me to draw back; and, sheltering myself under my disguise, I played the part of the merchant, until in distraction he pronounced my name. Not being able any longer to doubt that I was not recognised, I endeavoured to deceive him as to the road which I was to follow, there being more roads branching off from this village which fell into the great road from Edinburgh; and I said to him that I would go to sleep all night at Jedburgh. The road to go thither joined the road to London at this village on turning to the right. After he had pronounced my name I could remark that he had an extreme intention to make me believe, in spite of that, that he did not know me, for which I could not divine his motive. I did not fear to be taken in the village, having my pistols, one in each breeches pocket, charged and primed; but I doubted greatly that on his arrival in the evening at Edinburgh he would inform against me to enable them to write to the magistrates of the different towns on the road to London with orders to make me prisoner. I departed immediately after I had dined, taking at first the road to Jedburgh, but after having gone about a league, I found a cross-road upon my left, which I took, and immediately regained the road to London. I arrived in the evening at Kelso, which is eleven leagues from Edinburgh, and I availed myself of a letter of recommendation of M. Stuart, to sleep at the house of a burgess, in order to avoid unpleasant rencounters at an I never passed a journey with so much distress, plunged in melancholy, overwhelmed and absorbed in reflections the most cruel. I reduced my lot to the terrible alternative-either to perish on the scaffold, or to save myself in some foreign land, never again to revisit my native land, my parents, my friends whom I had left there, who were dear to me :--in fine, it was actually an eternal adieu to all. The next day I entered England.

Amid the immense number of prisoners which we made

e was er my istracger to eceive more great go to joined right. hat he of that, ine his ng my rimed; ning at hem to road to immelburgh, ss-road ned the vhich is lf of a house s at an distress, reflecle altermyself re land, o were

u to all.

e made

in the different battles we gained over the English, there were a great many who enlisted not in good faith, into our army, the greater part of them only seeking thereby for means more easily to desert, to rejoin their former troops in the English army. I had taken from thirty to forty of them into my company, of which there remained, at the battle of Culloden, but five or six. The unfortunate Dickson, my servant, was of this number, and he had the misfortune to be hung at Edinburgh, during my stay at the house of my Lady Jean Douglas, dying with all the bravery and fortitude possible. He refused his pardon, which was offered him by M. Chapman, his former captain in the 42nd regiment, on condition only that he would confess his fault. The fourteenth day after my departure, being two miles from Stamford, where I proposed to pass the night, the sun not being more than an hour above the horizon, and having made good thirteen leagues in the journey, in passing some covered caravans, all at once I heard a voice in one of these caravans cry out-"Look! look! see a man on horseback as like our rebel captain as two drops of water." And he named me at the same time. These caravans were going also to Stamford. They told me at the house of my Lady Jean Douglas, that there had passed, eight days before, caravans full of soldiers, wounded at the battle of Culloden, to convey them to the Hospital of Invalids at Chelsea, near London; but I believed them too far advanced to be able to find them in my road; and not reckoning to encounter in England those gentry who recognised me again, I had taken off my grand black periwig on account of the excessive heat of the weather, and having on my turned up hat, which covered my visage as if for the purpose of protecting me from the sun, I did not make it appear as if I understood them; and having passed these caravans, I always continued at the same pace of my horse till I had crossed the town of Stamford; then I set spurs to my horse, and rode on full eight miles at the gallop,

to obtain the advance of these caravans, in order that they might not see me again. I would have been afraid, by stopping all night at Stamford, of the searches which the magistrates would have been able to make on the reports of these soldiers.

In the meantime this adventure might have made me lose my horse, which would have reduced me to a situation the most desolate, the mere idea of which made me tremble. Arrived at the inn, as soon as he was entered the stable he lay down without inclining to eat or drink, and he appeared altogether done up. I tormented my imagination how I could continue my journey, if he was no longer in a state to travel, and I had still to dread the arrival next morning of these caravans at the same inn, which was the only one in the village. Plunged in uneasiness and chagrin, I did nothing else but come and go continually between the inn and the stable during two hours; at the last, after much torment of mind, I was agreeably surprised to see my horse in the end eating with a good appetite, and comporting himself to a miracle. landlord said to me that I had nothing to fear for him; offering at the same time to buy him by giving me three times more than he had cost me; reassured also as to the state of my horse, it was a great deliverance for me to be relieved from the most cruel perplexity. He added "that in some hours he would not feel any more his fatigues, and that next day in the morning I would be able to depart at such hour as I chose without fearing that he would leave me by the I fixed my departure for half-past two in the morning, under pretext of evading the heat, but in reality for getting in advance of these caravans, which had annoyed me so much.

The next morning at sunrise, as soon as I arrived at the high-road, a man, well-dressed as a burgess, aged about forty years, mounted upon a very fine bay courser, came across the fields, leaping all the hedges and ditches with an astonishing

they stopagisthese

e lose

n the emble. ble he peared could travel, e cara-rillage. se but during

with a. The r him; se times state of relieved

I was

in some
nat next
ch hour
by the

in the reality annoyed

ed at the out forty cross the conishing

agility, and he set himself down at my side, entering all at once into conversation in spite of the little disposition on my part to hold it, as he might have been able to see by my manner of answering him always in monosyllables. Having examined his physiognomy, as he sat on my left, I found in him a raised and troubled air, turning at every instant his head to look on every side. In fine, he had all the signs of a robber, with whom the highways in England were infested. I put, on the instant, my hand into my breeches pocket, holding a pistol in my hand cocked, and my eyes always fixed upon him, determined, upon the least movement which he might make with his hands, that my pistol should be immediately as ready as his. I regulated also the pace of my horse with his, never leaving him behind me, as I perceived that he had some desire to be, by slackening at every moment his pace. I did not incline to surrender my purse without a combat. In my position the loss of my money would have ruined me without resource, and I did not know how I should have been able to extricate myself out of such a serious embarrassment. Having travelled in this manner for more than half an hour, always upon the qui vive, forming a thousand broken resolutions, all of a sudden, he wished me good day, and made himself off at the same time, in the same fashion in which he had come across the fields, crossing the hedges and ditches; and without appearing to have any other idea in his mind than to get off the highway. Perceiving the bold countenance which I showed to him, he had given up making further questions, and I was very glad to see him depart, for an adventure of that kind might not have failed to be disastrous to me. If I had knocked him on the head, defending myself, I could not have presented myself before a Justice of Peace to make my deposition; and if he had taken my purse, I do not know how I should have been able to continue my journey, without money.

During the time that I was dining at a dirty jockey inn,

there entered a man whom I judged by his conversation with the hostess to be a Custom-house officer. This man set himself down abruptly at the table with me, without shewing me the least politeness or asking my permission. He passed a quarter of an hour without opening his mouth, making a considerable breach upon a piece of roast veal. Satiated at last, he laid down, with gravity, his knife and fork, with an air content and satisfied. "Sir," said he to me, "I saw you pass by this morning; apparently you have slept at Stamford. I perceived by your horse, of which we have none of that race in England, that you had come from Scotland. Tell me if it is true that they have entirely dispersed the rebels? It must be confessed that your nation sought with ardour its own destruction! Have we ever been governed with such mildness and moderation as we are at present by His Majesty King George? Your nation did not choose to remain quiet till it was totally crushed. Is it ever possible to eradicate from your nation this hereditary spirit of rebellion?"

I was uneasy, fearing that this coarse fellow had been sent by the magistrates of Stamford to try to verify the declaration of the soldiers; and not to lose sight of me until they should find an opportunity to arrest me in the first great inn on the route where I should pass the night. I answered him "that I did not know any news of the rebels, having only come from the province of Annandale, which is on the frontier of Scotland close to England, where they were generally altogether ignorant of what had passed in the north of Scotland; that as to the rest, being a pack-merchant I did not occupy myself but with my merchandise, and troubled myself very little with affairs of State." He asked immediately to see my merchandize. I told him that I had sent to London by sea my cloths and other worsted manufactures, and I had only with me a few handkerchiefs. I immediately opened my portmanteau to shew them, and I sold to him a piece without knowing the price, for they had forgot to mark it on with

him-

g me

ed a

ng a

ed at

h an

v you

ford.

t race

me if

? It

ur its

such

ajesty

quiet

dicate

en sent

ration

should

on the

that I

e from

Scot-

gether

; that

occupy

lf very

to see

don by

I had

opened

a piece

k it on

each piece. It is true I had not foreseen these embarrassments in the route to London to oblige me to sell them. In paying me for this piece of handkerchief he bestowed praises on my probity, telling me that I was a young man of conscience, and that all the other Scotch merchants who travelled daily by the road were real rascals, having made him pay lately for the same pieces of handkerchiefs nearly double what I had exacted from him. In searching my portmanteau, my embroidered vest appeared, and he had a great desire for it; but as to it, I told him that it was not in my power to sell it for less than five guineas. He thought no more of it, and I was very glad that he did not torment me more to have my vest, for I would not have given it for all the things in the world. If this man was sent after me, as I had suspected him, at least he would have to render an account that I was a merchant; and the piece of handkerchief that I sold him, apparently much cheaper than it had cost me, gave him a high idea of my probity. He made me take the addresses of his friends in London, in order that I might sell them similar pieces at the same price.

I arrived at London at six o'clock in the evening the seventh day after my departure from the house of my Lady Jean Douglas, having made a hundred and forty leagues without too much fatiguing my horse. I set my foot on the ground at a hotel in Grace Street, which M. Stuart had recommended to me for honest people; and I proceeded, as soon as I had changed my linen, to deliver a letter of recommendation to a person from whom all the favour I had to ask, was to find me a furnished room to hire, where I could lodge for the moment, in order to avoid the inconvenience of sleeping at a hotel. Having found him, his excuses surprised me much, at his not being willing to find me a lodging, at the same time that he informed me that the keeper of the hotel being a Scotchman, much suspected by the government, he feared that the Court employed some of his domestics as

spies to give them information of all Scotchmen who might arrive in London. I returned to the hotel very ill pleased with the clown, who did not choose to give himself the trouble to find me a lodging, and very uneasy, after what he had said, to be obliged to pass the night there. I did not shut my eyes the whole night with uneasiness, fearing that they might apprehend me on the information of these spies at the hotel; and having risen in the morning, at an early hour, I went out immediately to seek a lodging, without being able to find one in that quarter which would accommodate me, on account of the expense. Impatient and uneasy to depart from the hotel, I recollected myself all at once of a milliner who had proferred her friendship for me when I found myself in London in 1740; and the point was to know, if she had substituted some one in my place, whom she loved better than me, or if I could rekindle the same flames which I had then been able to inspire her with, after an absence of five years. As she had good sense, feeling, and a great sweetness of character, I was fully persuaded that I would risk nothing in trusting my life in her hands: so I at once took a hackney coach and repaired to her house. Having sent back the hackney coach at some paces from her house, I entered into her shop under pretext of buying something, imagining that she would not recognize me; but as soon as she saw me she called me by my name, in a transport of joy to see me again. Her servant being present, I said to her that she had possibly forgot me, since my name was Leslie. We entered into the saloon, where I recounted to her my misfortunes, which brought tears to her eyes; and I could see very well that this amiable, good woman yet loved me. I added that the convincing testimonies of her friendship and affection made me truly believe my life to be in safety in her hands. to that, yes," cried she, with vivacity! She embraced me immediately, and prayed me to be convinced that she still loved me as before, and that she had often thought of me.

night

ased

ouble

had

shut

they

t the

our, I

able

ne, on

from

r who

self in

d sub-

r than

d then

years.

ness of

hing in

ackney

ck the

ed into

ng that

me she

again.

ossibly

nto the

which

hat this

ne con-

ade me

Ah! as

ced me

she still

of me.

She offered me at once a room in her house, telling me that I should be doubly secure there, as she had never wished to let her chambers; and she made me all the entreaties possible to come and occupy them without tarrying a moment, as I was exposed to disagreeable accidents in a hotel. I accepted the obliging offer which she had made me. I went back to the hotel to fetch my portmanteau, and I returned to dine at her house, and to enter into possession of a very fine room on the first floor above; and having found a stable in the neighbourhood, at night I moved my horse thither myself. in order that the people of the hotel, if they were spies of the Court, might be ignorant of the quarter I had gone to dwell at. Thus I was then reassured and tranquil on that My horse was so jolly that I sold him at once very advantageously, and gained from that source much more than the expense of my journey, with the loss which I had sustained on the piece of handkerchief.

Having remained at London a year, in spring, 1740, I received an order from my father, in consequence of a disagreement, to return to Scotland, and he only gave me three weeks to return thither, under the penalty of not pardoning me again that disobedience. I was at this moment very critically situated with regard to my father, when, in a visit that I made to one of my friends to inform him of my departure, I met at his house with the most beautiful person that ever lived, aged eighteen years, and who had arrived lately from the provinces. She was ignorant even of the perfection of her figure, altogether heavenly, and the power of her charms. She was the niece of my friend—an only daughter. Her father was of an ancient English house, the youngest branch of which was very illustrious, with the title of Duke. I remained to dinner with her at the house of her uncle, where she staid; and her engaging manners, her air of sweetness, her conversation full of good sense, spirit, modesty, and without affectation, all combined with her beauty to captivate

me, and to make me feel with violence the torments of a rising passion. This adorable beauty reduced me in a moment to suffering the most inexpressible. I could not keep my eyes off this charming object, and the more I admired her the more the subtle poison penetrated my soul. I was as if in a fever-breathing left me-a great movement of blood suffocated me--and with difficulty could my tongue utter monosyllables. I tried in the meantime to conceal as much as it was possible the distress and disorder with which my soul was devoured. I had never till then felt anything like it. I had found myself often loving, but this love easy to support, which often lost itself without knowing why, and of which a short absence or another beauty would break the chains—making me forget as easily that which had rivetted them; but this charming person had put me in a frightful state-my wounds were deep-I was thunderstruck-and I no longer knew myself. I did not speak to her of my departure, though that was the object of my visit; and the uncle invited me to spend the next day with them.

(

C

tl

n

m

di

W

de

gr

in

fre

my

in

ha

fat

He

exi

hat

he

an

he

wit

pos

har

I returned home distracted, raving, melancholy, overwhelmed, and with her image vividly painted in my imagination as if I continued to see her before me. Sleep did not relieve my pains: I passed the night without shutting my eyes, combating without ceasing cruelly between my love and my duty to my father. Having returned five or six times to her house, returning always more enamoured and more tormented than ever—every visit rendering me less master of myself; on the other hand, my father agreed to pardon my follies on condition that I should arrive in Edinburgh in three weeks: if I failed to comply with his order I would occasion a second quarrel with him, worse than the first, ready to explode. How distressing my situation was! My soul was lacerated: my case was truly perplexing.

I have had a terrible youth to pass; passionate, obstinate, lively, unruly, uncontrollable with a great many other

of a

mokeep

 \mathbf{mired}

vas as blood

utter

much

ch my like it.

o sup-

and of ak the

ivetted

ightful

-and I depar-

uncle

over-

nagina-

did not

ing my ove and

x times

d more aster of

don my

in three

occasion

y to ex-

oul was

bstinate, y other

faults; in the meantime, without having ever done anything against honour, probity, or which could wound the most delicate feelings of a gallant man; and I was always incapable of meanness. Too much indulged by the tenderness of my mother, she supplied me with money underhand, which served to feed my extravagances and follies, and I had only to demand from her to receive it. In 1738, then, at the age of eighteen years, the desire seized me of going to Russia to see my two uncles, M. Douglas, Lieutenant-General and Governor of Revel, and M. Hewitt, brother of my mother. formerly a favourite of the Czar Peter, and President of the College of Commerce; but he had retired on the death of that emperor with a considerable pension. My father would not consent to this; but having carried my remonstrances to my Lady Jean Douglas, who was my ordinary resource in my disputes with my father and my oracle, being the only person who could convince me when I was naughty, and made me desist immediately, she represented to my father, who was greatly arnoyed at my neglecting my studies, and plunging into libertinism, that it was the only means of weaning me from it, to send me away at a distance for some time from my associates, young gentlemen who encouraged one another in their debaucheries; and that it was fortunate this idea had come of myself; so this dear lady obtained my father's consent to it.

My uncle, Hewitt, was a man of distinguished merit. He had a great deal of good sense, spirit, attainments, and experience. He had been promoted at the Court of Russia, having entered into the service very young; and in his youth he had been as much a libertine as myself, by consequence an excellent pilot to cause me escape the rocks upon which he himself had split. He loved me greatly: he reproved me with mildness, honesty, and patience. In place of the disposition (caustic, morose, and severe) of my father, who having been always wise and philosophic from his infancy,

did not know how to sympathise and yield a little to the torrent of a boiling blood, different by temperament from his own. At the end of a year he taught me to think, and stifled a part of the great fire and vivacity which had carried me away, as if in spite of myself.

I had always had a decided inclination for the military profession: but my father not wishing that his only son should be cut off by a cannon-ball, contradicted me in that as he did continually in everything that I desired. My uncle, Hewitt, had been Colonel of a Regiment in Russia: but at the battle of Narva he was wounded so dangerously by a ball across the neck that he quitted the military service to be at the head of the College of Commerce. He subscribed very willingly to my desires of entering the service of Russia; and one day when the Count Gollovine and the Prince Carakin were at dinner at his house, both Secretaries of State and friends of my uncle, he presented me to them as come from Scotland expressly for the purpose of entering the service of Russia, and begged them to take me under their protection. They responded so well to my wishes that at the end of some days they had a commission as lieutenant made out for me, with all the assurances possible that at the end of the campaign of 1739 against the Turks I should have a com-I imparted to my father this opportunity of making a figure in the world, and over and above, this powerful patronage; that I had, moreover, that of Field-Marshal Keith, also a friend of my uncle Hewitt, who would render me a service, and that I was certain to be greatly supported by my uncle Douglas. My uncle wrote him a letter at the same time very pressing to have his consent, but in place of consenting to it he answered me in a letter conceived in terms the most severe, that I knew very well it was never his intention that I should settle anywhere but in my native country; that I had been all my life-time disobedient to his wishes, and that if I persisted in acting contrary to them, as I had done,

torrent s own. l a part way, as

nilitary aly son in that d. My Russia: gerously service He subervice of and the cretaries them as ring the der their at at the nt made he end of re a comf making powerful nal Keith, me a sered by my the same ce of conterms the intention country; ishes, and

had done,

I might depend upon it that he would disinherit me, and leave all his fortune to my sisters. This was a great misfortune for a young man, having all the appearance of being one day rich, although riches were often imaginary, to make him lose his fortune; and it was cruel and unpardonable in a father to conceal from his children the state of his affairs. In yielding obedience to my father, I lost the only opportunity that presented itself in my life of making a brilliant fortune. There are moments when fortune opens the door to men to attain success. Happy those who can discern and seize them at the instant. General Keith pressed me much to avail myself of the good inclinations of the two Ministers, reiterating to me his assurances that he would share with me the friendship which he had for my uncle Hewitt. then in his bed from the wounds which he had received at the siege of Ockzacow in 1738, where he commanded; and Lord Marischal, his brother, having come to St. Petersburg to take care of him, was an agreeable acquaintance which I then made, and which I renewed afterwards at Paris in 1751, my Lord being then in that city in quality of Ambassador of the King of Prussia.

Repelled by my father from entering the service of Russia, my sojourn there became disgustful to me; above all, since a young man, Smollet, who had come to St. Petersburg in 1739, with a design of entering the service, but who had not found it agreeable to his taste, spoke to me so much of the pleasures and amusements of London, that he gave me immediately a wish to go thither; and Smollet having himself resolved to return thither, I decided to embark with him in the first vessel that should sail from St. Petersburg, without waiting for the consent of my father, his reply not being able to reach me till after the freezing of the navigation of the Baltic,—waiting which, I should have been obliged to remain another year in Russia. My uncle, after having greatly combated my project of going to London, ceased in the end not to im-

portune me with regard to it. But as he saw better than I that my father would be much enraged at my procedure, he offered to advance me such sum as I should wish, on his account,—assuring me that my father would be unable for a much longer time than I believed before he could send me any more. I took only ten or twelve guineas, in the persuasion that my father would at once honour my Bills of Exchange.

After having secured my passage for London in the same ship in which M. Smollet was to embark, and having agreed as to the price with the captain, Walker, captain of another merchant vessel, which was to depart for London at the same time, came to the coffee-room demanding of me to speak to him particularly. He said to me, that having been informed that I wished to go to London, he had come to beg me most earnestly to accept my passage in his ship, which would sail in company with that wherein my friend M. Smollet was; and that far from exacting anything for my passage, he would regard it as an infinite obligation to keep him company; that fresh provisions would not be wanting on board, since I would only have to give him a state of all that I should wish, and he would furnish them at once; that as to wine, there was no person better provided than he was, having not only Spanish wine, wine of Bourdeaux and Oporto, but many kinds of wine besides—the last voyage of his vessel having been to traverse all the islands of Greece with some Lords who had freighted her, and he had no other cargo but arms and legs of statues, and a great many pieces of marble with inscriptions, of which he understood nothing; but above all, wherever he could find good wine, he was careful to lay in a good stock. He added that he was at his ease, without wife or children, having realised seven or eight thousand guineas, which he had in the bank in London; that his vessel was his own property, without having any partner; and that he had decided to sell her on his arrival in London, to pass the rest of his

han I

re, he

n his

for a

nd me

e per-

ills of

same

agreed

nother

at the

speak

formed

e most

ald sail

as; and

would

y; that

I would

ish, and

was no

Spanish

kinds of

been to

yho had

l legs of

riptions,

rever he

d stock.

children,

hich he

wn pro-

decided

st of his

days in a philosophical retreat. I had seen M. Walker many times, and I had always distinguished him much among other mariners for his probity, a great sweetness of character, the most agreeable company, and much experience of the world, and knowledge of good manners, and from fifty to sixty years of age. He begged me to dine with him next day on board his ship, and he would engage my friend, M. Smollet, to be of the party, telling me that his captain with whom I had made arrangements for my passage should be there also, and that being his intimate friend he would take upon him to disengage me of the word that I had given him to proceed with his vessel. He gave us a magnificent repast, and finding him the most agreeable company, I accepted with pleasure his proposal.

We departed from St. Petersburg in company with the other ship, in which M. Smollet was embarked, and having had much calm weather our parties of pleasure were to belay the two ships together to give a dinner to Smollet and his captain, having been better provided than they in a thousand sweets and little things which afford pleasure at sea. breeze of wind upon the coasts of Denmark at length separated us, and we did not see each other again till we were at London, where we arrived after a passage of six weeks. I had all the amusement possible in the vessel. M. Walker was full of continual attentions for me, acting as if I had been his own son; giving me good advices with much sincerity and mildness. He was one of those sweet souls and good hearts which one finds more commonly among the English than anywhere else. Having more experience and foresight than I then had, he always assured me that my reconciliation with my father would not be so easy and prompt as I imagined, according to the character which I had often given him of him, as being extremely harsh and severe; and on arriving he engaged me to stay at his house in waiting to receive news from my father. This I did, and this was my good fortune, for having drawn a bill of exchange on my father, and written letter upon letter, he persisted in refusing to answer. Poor Walker took me sincerely into his friendship, acting continually towards me with all the affection and feeling of a father, so that I remember well the obligations under which I was laid to him, which were conferred upon me in such a noble and generous manner as not to make me blush for them.

M. Walker had placed his vessel in the docks to have her sold after our arrival in London, but not finding any person to purchase her, and having an offer of a freight for Bourdeaux, he desired to make another voyage before quitting the profession of a mariner. He pressed me strongly to make the voyage with him to keep him company, telling me that money should not be wanting, his purse being at my service with all his heart, and nothing that could afford me pleasure; that besides, I would have the pleasure of seeing France, and that it would be a pastime, waiting till my father should grant his pardon. I accepted with pleasure the obliging offer of this worthy man, not seeing any other course to follow on account of the silence and obstinacy of my father not choosing to reply to my letters; and everything was ready for our departure in two or three days.

My friend Smollet, who on his return to London had obtained a lieutenancy in the regiment of Wentworth, lodged in the Court end of the town; and as I staid always at the house of M. Walker, who had his house at Wapping, the quarter of the seafaring people, we were at the two extremities of London, and I rarely saw him; but as I was on the eve of my departure with Walker, I went to pass a day with him, and to take leave. Returning from his house about eight o'clock at night, the lamps being lighted, in going along Change Alley—a passage like to that of the Palais Royal, which abuts in the street de Richieleu—absorbed in reflections and plunged in the deepest distractions which my deso-

on my friendon and gations l upon ake me

person r Bouring the take the t money with all re; that and that trant his account osing to r depar-

don had n, lodged ys at the bing, the extremias on the day with ase about ing along is Royal, in reflecmy desolate situation furnished me, all at at once I was awakened from them by a voice which called me by my name. I turned my head, and I saw M. Whitlock, a young English gentleman whom I had known at St. Petersburg, where he had passed the winter with the design of entering into the naval service of Russia; but being put out of sorts at St. Petersburg, and his eldest brother not inclining to honour his Bills of Exchange, he was there also as ill at ease as I then was at London. He engaged me to go and sup with him at his house; and having arrived at his lodging, I recounted to him all my history since I had seen him, and my unpleasant situation by the obstinate silence of my father, which put me under the necessity of availing myself of the obliging offer of M. Walker, whom M. Whitlock had known at St. Petersburg, to accompany him in his voyage to Bourdeaux. M. Whitlock, after having made me see how much my father would be enraged a thousand times more against me, although he was inclined to pardon me, when he understood that I was not at London, but running on the seas, he obligingly offered to lodge me, and to mess together in the same house with him, and that he would not allow me to want for anything while waiting till I had news from my father. He added that he was then at his ease, having got his patrimony out of his brother's hands. He proposed to me to sleep at his house, and I consented to it on condition that we should go next day, at six o'clock in the morning, to see M. Walker, who approved of our reasons for remaining in London. We remained to dinner with Walker, and I took leave of this worthy man with tears in our eyes, with a mind penetrated with gratitude for the paternal affection which he had manifested to me.

How was I confounded and petrified when, in reading the Gazette, I found there the tragical fate of this worthy and honourable man! His vessel went to the bottom in a raging sea, three weels after his departure from London, and the unfortunate Walker perished with all his equipage, without a single man in it being saved. How I did lament the fate of this worthy and amiable man! How I still do so every time that I think of this incomprehensible event! I shed tears for him in abundance; at the same time that the remarkable providence of an invisible power, which had prevented me, by my meeting Whitlock in Change Alley, from finishing my existence with him, filled my soul with admiration and thankfulness.

Whatever name we may give it-fate, chance, or Providence—its effects are visible and incomprehensible, as I have experienced it in regard to myself, although the veil that covers it from our eyes be impenetrable to feeble mortals. It failed to change his resolution of not going more to sea, and for accomplishing his unfortunate destiny; no person appeared in six weeks to buy his ship, and having again the offer of an advantageous freight for Bourdeaux, which would gain him three or four hundred guineas of profit. That I was not at the bottom of the sea, it happened that Whitlock and I should at the same instant walk along Change Alley, where I had never passed before, and that he should have recognized me by the light of the lamps, for I would not have recognized my father at my side—having been then in the deepest abstraction, and absorbed in the most cruel reflections upon my situation. It was necessary that I should have had to take leave of M. Smollet to fall in with Whitlock; in short, it happened that Whitlock had sufficient friendship for menot having much frequented his company at St. Petersburgto offer me his purse, and to cause me at the same time to enter with him in the same lodging-house.* This is a series

p

^{*} I have passed all my life, so often preserved as if by miracle from perishing, always in difficulties, overwhelmed with misery, persecuted without ceasing by fortune. My life was passed in the service, where I exposed my body to the most excessive fatigues which I put myself to, to render me useful to the service. They have granted me a pension, out of which to furnish me the mere necessaries of life. M. the Duke d'Anville and the

nipage, lament

still do

event!

hat the ad pre-

, from

dmira-

r Pro-

e, as I

eil that

nortals.

to sea,

ain the

would

at I was

ock and

Alley,

ld have

ot have

in the

lections ave had n short,

r me-

sburg—

time to

a series

acle from ted with-

exposed

ender me which to

and the

of surprising events that could have never happened by pure, blind, irregular chance, in the course of its progress. Although one were to make reflections all one's life on this stroke of Providence, the more one tries to fathom it, the more will it appear to be involved in darkness. All is enveloped in obscurity, uncertainty and doubts. The worthy but unfortunate Walker was a virtuous, good man, of great uprightness, generous and compassionate for his fellows in adversity, of a mild and cheerful character, and possessing all the fine qualities that could make him pleasant and agreeable in society.

My father left me to languish in London five or six weeks more before replying to my letters. He had a great deal of spirit and experiences, very impatient and severe, ignorant of the mildness and reasonableness which it was necessary to have with youth, which are all born with different characters—which they take from bodily constitution. A young man the most lively and wild can be reclaimed by mildness; but never by a great stoical severity, which only serves to agitate his mind, and to revolt him against his father, whom he would regard more as a tyrant than as his friend, and will not value him. After having exposed me to a thousand perils of every kind, where a young man might fall, delivered to despair, he sent me at length a bill of ex-

Abbe Terrace came to curtail the funds which I had to subsist upon. After having been saved so many times miraculously from perishing, shall I escape in my old age, or die of hunger and misery? "I do not fear," said Bedoyere, "but that cruel poverty, which breaks the torn heart, enervates the soul, and abases the mind."—Unfortunate Spouses, p. 152. Homer says in his Odyssy, "Indigence breaks down the soul, and robs us of half the spirit." Thus it is a truth anciently recognized, and which I have experienced myself. "Fortune," said Charles V., "obliged me to raise the seige of Metz. She is like all women—she confers her favours on the young, and withholds them from grey hairs." She has never been favourable to me during all the course of my life. I make a great difference between fortune and Providence.

change to pay my debts, ordering me at the same time to return to Edinburgh in three weeks, if I wished to profit by his good dispositions of being reconciled with me. It was precisely at this critical moment that chance made me encounter this angelic person. I remained in London in the adoration of this divine beauty till there remained only sufficient money to make my voyage with economy; and, struggling continually between love and reason, I took all at once the resolution of departing next morning, without seeing her again, to take leave, in spite of myself, and under the fear that sole regard for the charming Miss Peggy might in an instant overturn all my sage and prudent resolutions. In again revisiting her, I should no longer be master of myself, and would involve myself in a new chain of embarrassment. I arrived at my father's house, the reconciliation immediately took place, and the past was forgotten.

During six years that I had remained in Scotland absent from the adorable Miss Peggy, the uncertainty of her sentiments in regard to me, the little hope of seeing her again, time which effaces entirely new objects, although one of inferior beauty, had always made me insensibly lose sight of her. But the instant that I found myself again in London, within reach of seeing her again, her image came back again immediately to my soul, my passion rekindled all at once so strongly that the certainty of perishing on the scaffold to see her again would not have hindered me from going to her. I only waited paying her a visit for the clothes which I had ordered from a tailor, and he favoured my impatience by bringing them, with my fine embroidered vest within twenty-four hours.

Thus habited I took a hackney coach, which I sent back again near to the house of her uncle. Having asked of the lacquey who opened me the door if his master was at home, he answered me not, but that they expected him to dinner. I informed myself if his niece, Miss Peggy, was in town or in

ime to rofit by
It was me end in the ed only y; and, k all at at seeing the fear night in colutions. aster of embaraciliation

Scotland ty of her being her ough one ibly lose again in age came rekindled ishing on dered me sit for the e favoured abroidered

sent back ked of the thome, he linner. I town or in

The sole reply of the lacquey, "that she was at home," caused me such a palpitation of the heart and a shaking of the nerves that with difficulty I could support myself. I entered into the saloon, and I again saw the lacquey to ask if she was visible. He returned at once to announce to me that she was just coming down. The presence of this charming person, who appeared more beautiful than ever, redoubled my disorder, and I remained like a statue. It was in vain that I attempted to speak to her! My mouth and my tongue refused their functions. Confused, and as if petrified I had my eyes fixed on her in eestacy and admiration. As soon as I had a little recovered myself and was able to speak, I said to her, that having been engaged in the unfortunate affair of Prince Edward, I had hesitated much whether I should present myself at her uncle's house, fearing to expose my friends to troublesome embarrassment in case that I should be discovered with them; that in the meantime the remembrance of the civilities and kindnesses which I had received from her uncle six years ago, had always been impressed so vividly on my mind that I could not resist the temptation of offering him with loud voice the assurances of my gratitude and thanks. During the time that I spake, the adorable Miss Peggy fixed a look full of pity, of compassion, and of sweetness on me, and answered me that her uncle having always had a sincere friendship for me, would certainly take a deep interest in my misfortune, and would not regard any risk that he might run for the pleasure of seeing me and being useful to me. Her uncle entered at the moment, greatly surprised at seeing me again, and he embraced me with affection. I related to him my disasters. He remarked to me that it was good for me to wish to be a maker of kings. As for him he cared very little whether King George, King James, or the Devil was upon the throne of England, provided he left him peaceable possessor of his goods, and these he would not choose to lose

for all the kings of the universe. He added that he was greatly affected with my situation; he counselled me to avoid the roads where I might meet in with my compatriots, offered me his house heartily to wait till I should find an opportunity of saving myself beyond sea, and he begged me to begin from that moment by staying to dine with them. There came a great many persons after mid-day to visit, to whom the uncle presented me under the name of M. Leslie; and I made one of a party of quadrille with Miss Peggy and two other ladies. How the time glides swiftly with the person you love! I passed the whole day with her, the most delicious that I had hitherto known, and which appeared to me as but an instant! The uncle said to me at supper that he had remained in the house on my account, and he begged me to be very sure not to stand upon ceremonies, as he would not regard me in future as a stranger at his house. I returned to sleep for the night at the house of my generous friend, the milliner, with my mind well content and satisfied. At parting the uncle invited me to come every day to breakfast, and to pass the day at his house; and his adorable niece joined in his invitations, saying that by coming at an early hour in the morning I should run less risk of encountering any of my acquaintances who might be able to recognise me. He offered me a room in his house, which I could not accept of, fearing lest I might occasion him any mal-adventure in case I should be followed in the streets by any one who might know me and be taken in his house.

Having passed five days continually with my adorable Peggy from nine in the morning till eleven o'clock at night (at which time I returned to sleep at the house of my hospitable friend), her conversation, easy and full of good sense and spirit, her knowledge, which she made appear with modesty and without affectation, truly learned without making it appear ostentatiously, her sweet manners, delicate sentiments, in fine, all astonished me and filled me with admiration at the

he was o avoid offered rturity in from came a ie uncle ade one r ladies. ove! I t I had instant! ed in the sure not d me in p for the ner, with he uncle pass the is invitamorning acquainred me a aring lest should be

adorable at night my hospisense and modesty ting it apentiments, tion at the

v me and

perfections of her mind equally beautiful as her figure. I had never yet dared to tell her that I loved her, fearing to shock How timid one is when one loves sincerely! What a change in my character! I did not know myself again! I had always been very enterprizing and bold in presence of the sex; and if I failed to succeed with them I made my retreat with a good countenance, without being disconcerted; but in presence of this divine person I lowered my eyes when she looked at me, and every time that I wished to raise them to her, my passion immediately brought a trembling on me. I remained stupified. I did not open my mouth. to me a superior being whom I feared to lose by revolting her by a declaration of love, in case her sentiments in regard to me might not be in my favour; always terrified at offending her even by the smallest word, and not making her understand otherwise my excess of love and tenderness but by the sighs which escaped me, or by my anxieties, which she might well attribute to my unfortunate situation, and not to its true cause. Having passed a whole day tete-a-tete with her, after having suffered a long and cruel conflict in wishing to declare to her the secret of my soul, without power to overcome my irresolution, ready to suffocate I threw myself all at once at her feet; I seized her hands in transports, I kissed them both at the same time, I bathed them with my tears. I had not but the power of an incoherent voice, and my lips trembled to tell her that I adored her,—that I did not wish to live but for her,-that my passion was of an old date, my eyes having conspired to tell her the situation of my heart in 1740, before my departure for Scotland. She made me rise immediately, telling me coldly that she had always esteemed me much—that she had true regret at seeing me so absurd in the terrible crisis in which I then found myself, between life and death; that I could see daily some of my comrades whom they led to the scaffold, that from one moment to another I might follow them ready to suffer the

same punishment; and she exhorted me to think more solidly and to dream rather of the means of saving myself than to fill myself with chimeras. "Ah! my angel," answered I briskly, "if you do not condescend to love me, I shall be envious of their lot, and I should choose before that death. It is only you who are able to make me appreciate life, and without you it is not worth the trouble of preserving it." From that moment I had a tacit permission to express to her all the tenderness and affection which the most violent passion could inspire; but drawing down upon me always the strongest reprimands and counsels to behave more like a reasonable man.

Her cold and reserved manners dissolved and afflicted me to death; while in company with other men her gracious, prepossessing, and engaging manners, and comporting herself altogether different than with me, rendered me jealous to excess. I imagined that all those to whom she showed the least politeness and civility were greatly more than me in her good graces and favour. One of these friends had made her a present of a very beautiful tortoiseshell snuff-box, enamelled and set in gold, with a miniature, altogether a beauty, being the first of that kind of snuff boxes that had appeared in England.

Finding myself tete-a-tete with her, while I spoke to her, I observed her inattentive and often absent, turning round her snuff-box and fixing her attention on examining the miniature. My jealousy was roused against the snuff-box. I reproached her with bitterness, that certainly her mind was not occupied with the miniature which she had seen so many times, but that she could think at that moment from it to him that was present; that he was the happiest of mortals in possessing her heart, while my cruel and miserable lot was altogether calculated to move pity; overwhelmed with affliction of all kinds, and ready to sink under my misfortunes, I could support with patience her sternnesses and the cold air which she continually testified to me; but the sole thought

s solidly in to fill briskly, vious of only you you it is oment I nderness inspire; primands

gracious, g herself calous to owed the me in her made her enamelled aty, being peared in

ke to her, ing round the miniaox. I rend was not a so many from it to mortals in the lot was with afflicnisfortunes, the cold air ole thought

that she loved another, and the idea of having a fortunate rival lacerated my soul, and broke my heart. My adorable Peggy, in her first movement, threw the snuff-box against the marble chimney-piece, which broke it in a thousand pieces, saying to me with fire and vivacity, that I should never have reason to fear a rival; that she loved me tenderly, and that she would no longer disguise her sentiments for me. conjured me in the meantime, on learning her manner of thinking, not to abuse i., and to keep myself within bounds regarding her love for me, which should be constant and inviolable as long as she existed. Heavens! what were my transports. The surprise made me remain for a moment stupified and immoveable, not being able to believe my ears. I seized her in my arms—I pressed her to my bosom—I gave her a thousand tender kisses—shedding, at the same time, tears of joy. I swore to her an eternal love and friendship: that my tenderness and affection should be unalterable; my fidelity proof against everything till my last breath. were the first vows that I had made and pronounced in all the sincerity of my soul, and in all truth I adored her. She deserved to be so by the whole universe as a prodigy; all the perfections and amiable qualities which one could find in her sex were united in her; and her ravishing beauty-which none could behold without being captivated—was the least of her charms. Since this avowal of my angelic Peggy, I regretted every moment that was not passed with her; the hours flew with extreme swiftness, and the hours and days did not appear but as instants. I saw her every day, and the last day seemed the shortest-the least petty absence appeared to me insupportable, cost me pains, and they were for me sad and mournful moments when I had her not before my eyes to I did not desire from the Supreme Being any other treasures than those which I possessed, and I had no other prayers to offer up to heaven than to grant me the continuation of the felicity which I enjoyed, which might serve as an emblem upon earth of the state in which they represent the blessed. Happy moments those which I have passed with my charming Peggy! the only ones that I have ever known, and the only ones that I shall ever know; but I have since paid dearly for them by the tears which she has cost me, and which she will yet cost me every time that I recall these delicious hours which fortune has converted into bitterness and regrets for the rest of my life.

Having heard one day in my chamber a noise in the street, I approached the window, but what was my surprise when I saw a dozen of my comrades escorted by the police, who conducted them to be executed on the scaffold at Ken-This was the garrison that Prince nington Common. Edward had left at Carlisle on our retreat from England. and Messieurs Hamilton and Townley the governors of that town and citadel, were of the number of that unfortunate troop. I was so much the more struck at seeing them that but for my obstinacy and firmness I would have then been with them at that moment to perish in their sufferings. M. the Duke of Perth, my Colonel, commanded me, on our retreat, to remain in Carlisle with my company. I answered him that I would fight to the last drop of my blood for Prince Edward, but that never would I be left to be a victim by choice; and I decamped from his house in a fury, without waiting his reply. Persisting in my resolution, I departed next morning with our army; and upon the news of the capture of Carlisle by the Duke of Cumberland two days after cur departure, the Duke of Perth, who was very narrowminded, but a very honest and gallant man, said to me that he pardoned me for having disobeyed him, and that he was deceived as to the bad state of that place, believing that it could sustain a siege. I thanked, from the bottom of my heart, the Almighty who had watched over my destiny, for had it not been for my obstinacy my position at that moment would have been melancholy, by finishing in like manner my days in torments. What a difference of fate! Not to have but a quarter of an hour more to live, or to be the most happy of mortals, as I then was. How the misery or happiness of all one's life depends upon small things, and is but the affair of an instant, for ever irrecoverable! The smallest error of judgment in our decision entails a train of effects, ad infinitum, necessary, and inevitable.

in the

urprise

police.

Ken-

Prince

ngland,

of that

rtunate

m that

n been

gs. M.

on our

 $_{
m nswered}$

Prince

ctim by

without

leparted

the cap-

ys after

narrow-

me that

he was

that it

of my

tiny, for

moment

nner my

The little attention I had paid to my hospitable friend the milliner, began to aggrieve her mind a little, rendered her uneasy, and put her some times out of humour. In fact, she had all the reason possible to be displeased with me, as I passed all my time with my aderable Peggy; and absent from her, I was thoughtful, heedless, little capable of showing to my hostess all the acknowledgment she merited, for the essential services which she had rendered me. In short, I was in a mind the most sorrowful and disagreeable for any other than my dear Peggy, in spite of the efforts which I often made upon myself to cause myself appear at least with a forced gaiety, with a sufficiently bad grace, as I had never before known myself to counterfeit, so that no one could read my displeasure and discontent in my physiognomy. My hostess often made me light reprimands on the subject of my coldness and indifference. I blamed myself for it, for she was truly a worthy woman, who merited a better return on my part for the continual attentions which she had shown me, and the lively and tender interest she had taken in my fate. I always accused my cruel situation for being the cause of it; and I endeavoured to persuade her of the impossibility of being otherwise, when between life and death, seeing my companions led daily to the scaffold, and uncertain if I should not soon follow them, as to which my lot in that respect did not depend but upon an unhappy moment of being discovered. This amiable, good woman, who had a great sweetness in her character, and good sense, was sufficiently disposed to believe all that I said to her.

Being at lunch one day in my room with my hostess, I was confounded on seeing my charming Peggy enter it, urged by a desire to see my hostess from her want of confidence in me. My poor hostess having regarded at first my angelic Peggy, lowered her eyes, blushed, and remained as if stupified. She wished to go away, but I prevented her. My Peggy having satisfied her curiosity, departed in about a quarter of an hour, and whispered in my ear, descending the stairthat she had nothing to fear. My hostess reproached me immediately, notwithstanding without bitterness, that she was no longer astonished at my indifference; that she saw well the cause, but that she could not blame me as she was the most beautiful person she had ever beheld, with manners the most engaging, and an air of affability, full of goodness; adding, that certainly there was no man who could resist her charms. I wished to avail myself of the same arguments as before, but she was no longer the dupe of them. Whatever confidence I had in the sweetness and fine disposition of my hostess, it was a matter of prudence to take precautions against the evil effects which might happen to me from this adventure; so much the more, as she could in a moment of bad humour take a speedy vengeance too fatal and melancholy for me, without giving her any trouble; she had only to go and inform against me, and cause me to be arrested on the spot; also having in view similar instances of resentment on the part of women who believed themselves slighted. So I looked out the same day for another lodging; and I was sufficiently fortunate to find an apartment at the house of a periwig maker, in the neighbourhood of the hotel of my dear Peggy. Having told my landlady, the next morning, that having found an opportunity of saving myself beyond sea, I would move at once; taking leave of this amiable and good woman, and giving her all the assurances possible of my gratitude and everlasting remembrance of the services she had rendered me. She embraced me with tears in her eyes,

truly afflicted at our separation; and not having a heart sufficiently hard to resist those beautiful tearful eyes, I was sensibly touched by her sentiments for me.

s, I was

rged by

e in me. Peggy,

tupified.

y Peggy

arter of

stair—

that she

she saw

she was

manners

oodness;

esist her

ments as

ever cony hostess,

ainst the

venture:

humour

for me,

and in-

the spot;

t on the

l. So I

d I was

ouse of a

my dear ing, that

nd sea, I

and good

le of my

vices she her eyes,

One would require to know all the force of love and friendship united, to be able to form an idea of the uninterrupted felicity which I enjoyed with my charming Peggy; the moments were too delicious and precious not to banish everything that could molest our tete-a-tetes; her door was shut to all visits which she paid by the score every day, never being visible to any person, and finding always plausible reasons to justify to her uncle this change in her manner of living. How everything pleases when the mind is satisfied and content! We sallied forth, often to the environs of London, where Nature even seemed to have changed its countenance. Everything appeared smiling, the solitary walks gay, the verdure beautiful, the colcurs of the flowers brilliant, the points of view picturesque, the innocence of rustic life to be envied, everything charmed the senses, and offered an agreeable prospect; it was the presence of my Peggy that embellished these rural scenes. The night often surprised us in our delicious walks without our ever thinking of it, deceived by the swiftness of time. I was at the height of my wishes, and insensible to all that did not immediately concern my present happiness, of which I appreciated all the value. All the daily executions of my comrades made no impression upon me. I feared a danger much more frightful than death. It was that of being separated from her, she being all that interested me in life, and I declined all the opportunities in my power of saving myself in foreign countries, which her uncle and many other persons were occupied continually in procuring for me; believing it impossible ever to survive a separation, with the uncertainty of seeing her again, and the prospect of that alone made me shake and tremble, so I had always for a pretext the smallness of the security of the opportunities which they offered me daily, although they were

willing to get me a passport, and signed even by the Duke of Newcastle, secretary of state, to go to Holland.

Having learned that one of my relations was newly arrived from Scotland, on returning in the evening from our walk, I mentioned to my Peggy my anxiety to learn the news of my family, and in place of going to sup at her house as was my custom, I took a hackney coach and set myself down at his lodgings. Having found him at home, he began immediately to offer me his compliments of condolence on the loss I had sustained; but I paid no attention to it, imagining he spoke of my misfortunes, which I had in common with all those who were attached to Prince Edward. In the meantime he made me to comprehend quickly that my mother and my sister Rollo had both died a few days after my departure from Scotland, and that my mother had finished her existence by pronouncing as her last words-"I die perfectly content and satisfied, knowing that my poor and dear son is saved." He was one of those grammatical blockheads who possessed a fund of the Greek and Latin languages, but who were profoundly ignorant of the human heart and the most ordinary circumstances of life. Had he been capable of reflection, he would have prepared me for receiving a shock so truly overwhelming. How does Heaven mix its bitterness with its sweets! I remained for a moment stupified and petrified like a statue! In the end, I turned my back upon him, and departed precipitately without answering a word to his sottish compliment. Having resumed my place in the hackney coach with difficulty, I told the coachman to take me back again to my own house. I was well nigh suffocated in the carriage, where I fainted away for some minutes without consciousness. Fortunately, on feeling the choking and difficulty of breathing coming on. I all at once loosed my neck; by detaching also the neck of my shirt, I recovered from my fainting with a torrent of tears, which relieved me greatly. The coachman, who knew nothing of my state, always drove on, and I even believe that the

uke of

arrived walk, I of my was my n at his ediately ss I had e spoke ose who he made y sister re from tence by tent and d." He ed a fund ofoundly circumne would helming. reets! I statue! ed precipliment. difficulty, vn house. I fainted tunately, ming on, e neck of t of tears, knew no-

e that the

motion of this rude vehicle did me good. Arrived at my lodging, my landlord, who had a good and compassionate heart, seeing me in affliction, followed me into my chamber, and having learned the cause of my being out of order, wished to sympathise with me by preaching all at once morality, and these stupid, old, and usual topics of consolation. I took him like a fury by the shoulders and pushed him rudely out of my chamber. I dared him to enter it again till I required him. Then shutting my door with violence, I threw myself immediately upon my bed with my clothes on, and I passed the night in tears and groans without shutting my eyes. I accused myself of having been the innocent cause of the death of the most tender of mothers, by her sorrows and anxieties about me since the Battle of Culloden. I viewed myself as a monster of ingratitude, for having been able to remain two months at the house of my Lady Jean Douglas, at a quarter of a league from her, then sick and on her death bed, without exposing a thousand times my life rather than not seeing her again, to embrace her and to bid her an eternal adieu, and to receive her benediction. It appeared to me that this would have been to me a great consolation, and that after that I would have seemed to be paying a tribute to nature with patience and resignation. I blamed at the same time my Lady Jean Douglas and my father who had prevented me. This was the most cruel night that it was possible to experience. The death of my mother made me think less of that of my sister Rollo, though I loved her greatly. My father in his letters concealed from me their deaths, fearing to affect me too much, and thinking that my situation gave me sufficiency of troubles without adding to them by this melancholy news. He was wrong! Had he communicated it to me with precaution, he would have prevented that surprise which might have been fatal to me, coming as it did like a clap of thunder! On coming home, I wrote a note to the uncle of my charming Peggy, letting him know of my affliction.

The next day towards ten o'clock in the morning, I heard a knocking at my door. I was still upon my bed, such as I was on entering the house, with all my clothes on, and without having even changed the attitude into which I found I had thrown myself upon my bed. Oh, heavens! what a solace to my sufferings, when instead of my host, whom I believed at the door with the intention of teasing me again with his impertinence, I distinguished the sweet voice of my adorable Peggy, who came as an angel of consolation to dissipate in an instant the tumultuous tempests with which my soul was overwhelmed, and to recal me again to life! My divine beauty had arranged this visit with her uncle, who naturally would not the company of afflicted persons, in order to engage me to love come and pass the day at her house. The moment I saw her, I felt as if a restorative balm had penetrated with swiftness into my mind. My torments and agitations suddenly diminished. My soul on regarding her became immediately serene and tranquil. She loved me tenderly. She partook vividly of my pains, and was penetrated with my affliction. She joined her tears with mine, and the precious drops which fell from her beautiful eyes, which I wiped away greedily with my lips, pierced my heart. To see her afflicted was a thousand times more insupportable than my own sorrows and anxieties. My charming Peggy reanimated me by lessons of philosophy different from the pedantic maxims of the schools. She commended my affliction for the loss of a tender mother, and her conversation was more than ever essentially necessary on account of my forced estrangement from my native country. She excused the weaknesses which I had testified in delivering myself up wholly to my sorrows, of which a hard heart could not be susceptible. She pointed out to me with energy that life was too much subject to the dispensations of Providence, and to a chain of perpetual misfortunes, to allow us to mourn with regret those who are beyond the condition of feeling all the bitterness of them; above all, one oppressed with

I heard

as I was without

l I had

olace to

eved at

his im-

adorable

te in an

as over-

auty had

ould not

e to love

saw her,

wiftness

v dimin-

y serene

c vividly

on. She

hich fell

lily with

was a

ows and essons of

schools.

mother,

necessary

country.

elivering

art could

ergy that

ovidence,

to mourn

f feeling

sed with

disease, such as my mother was for many years. She made reflections upon my critical situation, and how very dangerous it was for me to render myself ill at this critical moment by giving myself thus over to sorrows equally disagreeable and fruitless. In fine, the heavenly and persuasive language of my charming Peggy, the refinement and delicacy of her reasonings, the eloquence uttered by a mouth so beautiful and so dear, made a greater impression on me in one hour, than all the rigmarole of foolish sermons by their trick would have been able to make upon me for ages. I felt my heart immediately lightened and balm restored to my soul. She insisted that I should go and dine, and pass the day at her house. There was nothing that I could refuse her, out of sorts as I was, and almost unrecognizable, with my eyes red and much inflamed. As soon as I had changed my linens, I repaired to the house of her uncle, who took great part in my affliction; and my charming Peggy devoted all her attention to dissipate the melancholy and distress with which I was overwhelmed. Man does not rest long in the same state. All his passions lift up at a time the ocean of his soul, and what inundations of ideas result from this intestine shock! Tempest stirs this outrageous sea, and the calm which succeeds is not separated but by a slight interval.

How reciprocal love, and founded on friendship, is the most precious gift of fortune! What is the grandeur of its force and the extent of its power? It is superior and above all the riches, the honours, the titles, and the other baubles which we seek after, with so much avidity; at the same time, how invulnerable and insensible to the most embittered stings of adversity! It blunts the arrows of misfortunes the most appalling, and allays the load of pains and sufferings the most insupportable. Content and satisfied by their mutual sentiments of tenderness and affection, they brave fortunes in the midst of persecutions the most envenomed, resting unshaken, and do not succumb to the

rigours of its power. It is only in the union of the different sexes that one is able to find this true friendship, which is proscribed the society of men. Two souls so blended and incorporated together, can have but the same sentiment and manner of thinking; the prospect of misery fails to make them tremble! They support it without murmuring; they erase the scourge of ambition, not having other than a continuation of their sentiments, which is their happiness. How many times have I begged of heaven but the cabin and the fare of Samuel, with my Peggy, to be the most happy of mortals? My dear Peggy has often reciprocated the same wishes; and I am persuaded that there is nothing there that could disturb our satisfaction and contentment. Felicity is an imaginary thing! Let one suppose himself happy, and he is truly so. Providence has made me know for once in my life that there can exist perfect happiness on earth, not subject to the reverses and caprices of fortune; but alas! this is only to impoison the remainder of my days, by the melancholy recollection of these happy moments.

Some days after, having used my host newhat harshly, he sent his servant to say to me that was visible, he wished to have the honour of speaking with me. On entering my chamber, he made a great many apologies for having taken upon him to endeavour to console me, saying that he was so touched with my affliction, that his heart bled for me. He proposed to me, as a party of pleasure, to conduct me to the house of one of his friends, who had promised him a window upon Tower Hill to see the head taken off, after dinner, of two rebels, the Earl of Kilmarnock and Lord Balmerino, two Scottish peers. I thanked him for his attention; but I excused myself to him, saying that he could see well that I had a heart too sensible to take pleasure in that sort of spectacle. He did not imagine that I was as guilty as they, and that there was no other difference between us but the fate which had befallen me in enabling me to escape being made prisoner.

A friend came to announce to me that the captain of a ship, whose sentiments he knew as those of an honest and faithful man, undertook out of regard for him to take me on board his ship under disguise as a sailor, but, in order to avail myself of it, it was necessary for me to embark the next morning. The thought of separating me from all that was dear to me shocked me. Quit my adorable Peggy! I shuddered at it! I answered him that this opportunity was not without risk of being discovered, for they had only to examine my hands, too delicate for a sailor, and my not knowing the business, the deceit would be immediately found out. He removed all these obstacles by telling me that the captain had foreseen them, and would cause me pass for an invalid from the moment that I should enter his vessel. He insisted much that I should profit by this opportunity, desiring ardently to see me out of danger; but his reasonings were useless, and he could not comprehend how I should expose my head to the scaffold, while I had the means of saving myself from danger. He was ignorant that I loved my Peggy more than life.

I recounted to my charming Peggy that an opportunity had at length presented itself of saving me beyond seas, by a captain of a merchant vessel, who had offered to take me on board, disguised as a sailor, next day in the evening, and next day he was to set sail, insomuch that he saw no danger of my being discovered. I did not say to her what I had decided on. She felt immediately, many times changing colour, remaining confused without answering anything, plunged in her reflections, and sustaining a cruel conflict in herself, as I was easily able to see, by her restlessness and embarrassed air. After a moment's silence, she said to me with liveliness, and, at the sametime, with tears in her eyes, "Yes, my dear friend, I prefer your safety to my own satisfaction and tranquility!" In the meantime, she was forced to confess that I was very unfortunate. I did not leave her

ifferent which is ed and ent and o make ; they than a ppiness. he cabin t happy he same ere that dicity is

! this is lancholy harshly, visible, me. On ogies for

and he

e in my

e, saying art bled, to conoromised aken off, ock and a for his he could easure in

between g me to an instant longer in pain. I embraced her tenderly; and said to her that I had not only rejected this opportunity, but that I would never avail myself of any one they might propose to me, choosing rather to die a thousand times than to separate myself from her, whose absence would be insupportable and render life a burden.

While we were dining one day tete-a-tete, I perceived that all at once she faltered, with an uneasy and embarrassed air, with her eyes continually fixed on the windows of the street, rising at every moment, and without ceasing she left and re-entered the chamber. Having asked several times with earnestness what it was, if she was ill, she answered me in equivocal monosyllables. I supplicated her in the end with clasped hands to tell me frankly the reason of her uneasiness for a quarter of an-hour. "Ah! my dear friend," exclaimed she, "you are lost! Behold a man who is certainly a bowman, whom I have remarked this long time passing and repassing before the house with his eyes fixed incessantly on the door. It is without doubt that he has been sent to keep sight of you, waiting till a detachment should come to make you prisoner. Perhaps some one has recognized you this morning, and having followed you to the house without your having perceived it, would all at once inform against you. I have visited the house from the cellar to the garret, and there is not a place where you could be concealed." I examined this man, and, positively, it was not a bowman who could have such a villainous look. This adventure alarmed me, the more so, that some one had come three days before, dressed and with the air of a street porter, asking for me at her uncle's, and as he did not choose to tell from what person he came, they said to him that I was gone. At the beginning, when I staid at the house of my good friend, the milliner, I had told her very imprudently the address of the uncle of my Peggy, not then foreseeing the consequence. I suspected at first that this was a spice of

y; and rtunity, y might es than insup-

 $\mathbf{rceived}$ rrassed of the she left l times $_{
m ered}$ $_{
m me}$ the end her unfriend," is cerng time es fixed as been should s recogie house inform ar to the be conas not a This adad come porter, se to tell I was

e of my

ently the

eing the

spice of

vengeance on her part, not having a doubt but that she must have known that I was every day in the house of my dear Peggy from morning to night. In the meantime, reflecting upon her great sweetness and goodness of character, I could not bring myself to believe that she could be guilty of such infamy. I went every morning in a hackney coach in going to the house of my Peggy with the blinds drawn up; and thus it was next to impossible to have been known by any one in the streets; in short, I could not know what to think of it.

This man not discontinuing his promenade, and looking always at the door as he passed, I did not know what course to take, undecided whether I should sally out at once, before the detachment arrived, trusting to my sword and legs (which would cause a terrible uproar in the street), or if I should remain quiet in the house to await the upshot. My charming Peggy, breaking the difficulty and my embarrassment with tenderness, said, with fire and vivacity, "No! they shall never make you die on the scaffold. If I cannot succeed in saving you by the influence of my parents, who are in favour at Court, I will come and see you in prison, in the evening of the day of your execution, with two doses of poison, and I will take one of them to show you the example to avail yourself of the other." Oh, heaven! the idea which my adorable Peggy suggested, made me tremble, and the proposition filled me with horror.* I did not in the least degree doubt that she would not have been capable of keeping her

^{*} Although an admirer of the works of the celebrated J. J. Rousseau as much as any one, I do not find in the portrait of his hero, St. Preux, in the novel, "Heloise," but a brute, whose love is founded solely upon her enjoyment, without which love is baseless. When he is tempted to throw her into the water on coming the better to drown himself with her, it is a frightful jealousy on account of the deprivation of the power of being able brutally to enjoy Madame Wolmar. When one loves truly upon a love founded on friendship, one might well kill himself through despair; but it is not natural that one who loves sincerely, with friendship and tenderness, could ever think of making the dear object which possesses entirely his soul perish. The very idea is revolting.

word, knowing all the violence and ardour of the English fair sex, above that of every other nation. As to myself personally, poison would have been all that I could have wished for, as the most acceptable after having been condemned, and a service of soul truly great to have procured it for me. I beseeched my Peggy to go with me again through the house. In going through the same, I observed a window in the storeroom, from which one could get out upon the roof, and go from thence upon the roof of the adjoining house. I sent forthwith my Peggy to remain as a sentinel at the window of the drawing-room, with a silver bell in her hand, to ring as soon as she should see any one approach the door to knock; and I agreed with her that that should be the signal for me to go upon the roof. I took off my shoes, fearing that they might make me slide upon the slates, and break my neck, which I put into my pockets, and I held the window with both my hands, to be ready to go at the instant I should hear the sound. Having remained for a quarter of an-hour in this position, with all the anxiety possible, my dear Peggy came back with her countenance changed, and said to me immediately, laughing, "The devil take them both. It is, it appears, the sweetheart of my maid. She has just come to ask of me permission to go out to walk with him, and the moment she was in the street she took familiarly his arm. abominable-looking villain of a man has given us a dreadful alarm."

A few days after this adventure, being at dinner with Peggy and her uncle, the footman told me that there was some one in the ante-chamber who wished to speak to me. I went out immediately, and was very much surprised to see there M. Colville, the man of business of Lady Jean Douglas. He told me that she had formed the resolution for some time of going to reside in France, and that he had been sent to London to procure a passport, where she could take one domestic more than she had, in order to carry me along with

sh fair onally, for, as service seeched i going eroom, o from t forthof the as soon k: and ie to go y might which I oth my ear the in this cy came imme-, it ape to ask moment . The dreadful

er with ere was to me. d to see Douglas. ome time sent to ake one ong with

her to save me in Holland; that he had left her at Huntingdon, which is about twenty leagues to the north of London, at the house of M. Rate, where she would remain three days to wait me before departing for Harwich; and that she had in her suite M. Stuart, and Mademoiselle Hewitt. disagreeable news! Before knowing my divine Peggy I would have been but too glad to find this opportunity of saving my life; but the case was changed. I did not live, nor desire to live, but for her. I remained for some moments confounded, and without knowing what to answer. I was very decided not to avail myself of the offer of Lady Jean Douglas, at the same time that I was embarrassed to find at once a plausible excuse to justify my refusal, fearing that she would imagine by this extravagant conduct that my head was turned; for no sensible person could imagine that any one who was in a situation liable to be executed on the scaffold, as soon as he was discovered, should reject an opportunity of saving himself from danger. moment's reflection, I said to M. Colville that I should be all my life thankful and penetrated with the most lively gratitude for the kindness of Lady Jean Douglas, but that my friends in London having found many opportunities to enable me to pass beyond seas, without any danger of being discovered, I would not, of all things in the world, expose her ladyship further to those troublesome embarrassments after having so much proved her kindness; and I begged M. Colville to state in his letter to her, not to wait for me at Huntingdon, not having it in my power to avail myself of her generous and obliging offers, seeing the inconveniences to which I should expose her. M. Colville departed immediately, and I returned to the table without, in the meantime, saying what he had been about; I only said that it was Lady Jean Douglas's man of business whom she had sent to learn my news. I trembled lest the uncle, not knowing with whom I had been in conference, should not remain in the dining-room

to eat by anxiety for me; and my extravagance having been then discovered, would appear to him inconceivable, and would lead him to entertain suspicions of the true motive of When the uncle departed, as he usually did after dinner, I communicated to my dear Peggy the obliging offer of Lady Jean Douglas, and the difficulty with which I had got clear of it; adding that I had refused it, as I should ever do everything that could separate me from her. "Ah! my dear friend," she answered me, "you have done very ill by the refusal. I have continually griefs and anxieties for you, without saying anything to you of them. Your safety makes me tremble, and torments me incessantly; and there is scarcely a night that I do not dream seeing you in the hands of the executioner. On the last occasion when you had proposed going, not being without danger of being taken, I imagined that it might be to pluck you from me, to drag you immediately to sufferings; and I was quite charmed that you had refused it; but this is quite different: Lady Jean Douglas is of a house too illustrious for the Court to make teasing inquiries and affront her by examining her closely upon mere suspicions; and they never could have positive information on the subject. You could not run any risk with her, and you ought to avail yourself of it." I was penetrated with the most profound grief to hear her wish me to depart; and interrupted her, accusing her of inconstancy, and reproaching her sharply for her indifference. "No," said she to me, "my dear friend, you are mistaken. I am so little changed in my sentiments for you that I have reserved a proof to give you of my affection, stronger than you have had hitherto, and which I do not wish you to mention till a favourable moment occurs to put my project in execution. My resolution is taken for a long time to follow your lot, by abandoning for you my native country, my parents, and every thing which I hold most dear, having waited for this that a safe opportunity might arise to save you without danger, and it has actually

g been

e, and

tive of

lly did

bliging

hich I

should "Ah!

very ill

xieties

Your

ly; and 1 in the

ou had

aken, I

o drag

ed that

dy Jean

o make

closely

positive

sk with

netrated

depart;

proach-

to me,

changed

to give

rto, and

moment

is taken

you my

I hold

ortunity actually

presented itself, such as I have desired, by Lady Jean Douglas. I will disguise myself as a man, and cross in the same packet boat with Lady Jean, without making it appear that I know you in the passage. Come, then, let us go immediately to procure dresses at the brokers, to be ready to depart to-morrow morning." She adding-"Providence will give us bread, and I shall be content in living with you on the cheer of peasants in preference to all the riches in the universe." I embraced my adorable Peggy with tears in my eyes. I assured her that I loved and adored her more than my life, and that these same sentiments of tenderness and affection which I had avowed for her till my last breath would prevent me for ever from plunging her into ruin and misery; covering myself at the same time with the contempt and indignation of her family; that if I had a certainty of having wherewithal to subsist upon independent of the world the case would be different; but that I did not know what might become of me when I should be saved in a foreign country, nor how to subsist in waiting till I was employed. My dear love seeing me quite decided not to allow her thus to throw herself over a precipice, spoke no more to me of my departure; and we passed the evening together with all the concord and satisfaction, as usual, that two persons devoted to one another could feel without reserve, by ties the most inviolable and the most perfect and sincere friendship.

Having retired to my lodgings after supper, I laid me down, but without being able to shut my eyes. A thousand reflections lacerated my mind. I examined my position in London, which, independently of danger, where I was exposed continually to be taken, was too bad to assure me being able to subsist for any long time, and having already proved the harshness of my father, it was evident that funds would fail me sooner or later. My Peggy had the prospect of being one day rich, but she would not enjoy more than an independent revenue. As it was my determination to betake myself

to Russia as soon as I should be saved in some foreign country, where my Peggy would know that I had the most powerful protection by the credit of my two uncles, who were still alive, I flattered myself to be able there to obtain a regiment in that service on my arrival in Russia, or soon after, thus I hoped to find there a favourable lot to participate with her. Then I could make a voyage to England incognito, to see her again, or to make her come to the foreign country to whose service I might be attached. I thought, further, that as it was for the interest of France on every account that the House of Stuart should be re-established on the English throne, abolishing the ancient system of that nation which had availed itself of this unfortunate house during twenty-four years, as a set-off to the English, a political stroke then practised, and which had not the least effect. She would in the end be able to make an attempt seriously, and to good purpose, in favour of Prince Edward, and then I should return to England in a brilliant situation to rejoin my Peggy. A thousand considerations made me resolve to avail myself of this opportunity of saving myself with Lady Jean Douglas, but the more fully that my dear friend wished it quite independently of her own project.

I rose at an early hour, and went to breakfast at the house of my Peggy. As soon as her uncle had left the saloon, to dress, I communicated to her my nocturnal reflections, asking at the same time for her advice, and to declare of herself whether I should remain or depart. She rehearsed again her project of accompanying me, but I protested solemnly to her that I would never allow it, and that it was quite useless to talk of it any more, that I would much rather perish upon the rack than allow her to precipitate herself into an abyss of ruin and destruction. Seeing that I did not yield, she said to me that it was decidedly necessary that I should depart with Lady Jean Douglas, and that she would sacrifice voluntarily her own happiness and tranquillity to see me out of danger.

es, who btain a or soon particiand inforeign hought, very acd on the nation during political ct. She eriously, nd then o rejoin solve to th Lady wished he house iloon, to s, asking herself d again emply to e useless ish upon abyss of

e said to

art with

luntarily

danger.

foreign

e most

As the time pressed, not being able to reckon that Lady Jean Douglas would wait for me an instant at Huntingdon, after my applying to M. Colville, he ordered me to go immediately to the coach office, to secure a place in the diligence which went in a day from London to Huntingdon, and which departed next day at three o'clock in the morning. At the same time that I should send forward my luggage, in order that I might have nothing to occupy my mind, and to be all to my Peggy. Her uncle having re-entered the drawing-room on my return from the coach office, I communicated to him the offer of Lady Jean Douglas, which I was about to avail myself of, and that I should depart next day in the morning. He made me his compliments, and testified to me a deep regret that I should be going to leave them. I took leave of her uncle immediately after dinner on leaving the table, and I went at once to wait upon my charming Peggy, at the rendezvous we had agreed on, to pass the little precious time which remained to us, in some solitary walk out of the city, and not to lose an instant of it. This was the more essential that a separation so truly tender would not admit of witnesses, above all the presence of her uncle, who never had the least suspicion of our sentiments. After mid-day, which was the most sorrowful we had ever known, it passed in vows and reciprocal oaths of fidelity, and of an eternal constancy, notwithstanding that it flew with the velocity of lightning. A hundred times I retracted my resolution to leave her, and I had need of the fortitude of my charming Peggy to strengthen me in my resolution to depart. She accompanied me to the coach office, where, having remained together till half-past eight o'clock at night, she mounted into a carriage. Inanimate and petrified as a statue, I followed the vehicle with my eyes, and when she departed completely, it was then that my resolution became wavering and weak. My first movement was to run into the room which they had given me in the coach office, to take up again my luggage, and cause it to be carried at once to my old

lodging at the house of the hairdresser, seeing that it was impossible for me to support a separation. I decided not to think any more of my life. Fortunately, reflection came to my aid, before my luggage was removed, and I became sensible that this step so singular would open the eyes of her uncle and betray and plunge us into an embarrassment the most distressing. Then I returned to the room and threw myself upon the bed to await the departure of the diligence, delivering myself up entirely to despair, and ready to sink under the weight of my affliction, at the same time that I. passed under review all my misfortunes, which presented themselves to my troubled mind in crowds, and painted in vivid colours. If I had been able to foresee that this was the last time that I should ever see her again, no considerations in the world would have torn me from her, and rather than have departed I would have met with firm step death, with the most excruciating tortures, with which I was threatened daily. Vain hopes! vain illusions! of which my life has proved one continual train without intermission, as well as a perpetual series of effects of adverse fortune. Supreme Being has given a fixed period for the dissolution. of all that he has created of matter, but if there is any immortality, our two souls will be eternally re-united.*

The diligence departed about two o'clock in the morning, and we arrived at Huntingdon at eight o'clock in the evening.

^{*} It is a remarkable circumstance that notwithstanding all the professions of love which the Chevalier de Johnstone made to his adorable Peggy, and the numerous descriptions of touching and pathetic scenes between them, his admiration of her beauty, virtue, talents, and accomplishments, he never after this period breathes a sigh for her loss, or even mentions her name, content, as he himself says, that if there is a hereafter he is confident that souls so knit together in love will be re-united in that happy state—a pious aspiration in accordance with all the other intimations with which the Creator's works abound, and worthy of being laid to heart, and improved amid the numerous vicissitudes of life to which our mortal state is exposed, and of which the Chevalier had his share throughout his checkered career.—ED.

Lady Jean Douglas had departed the night before to proceed to Harwich, not believing from the answer of M. Colville that I would repair thither. I took the post the next morning, hoping to join her before her arrival at Harwich; but the bad post horses had been so fatigued in running at full speed, that I was obliged to stop all night at Newmarket. The next day I found a luggage curricle, and I arrived before sunset at an arm of the sea, which is about a league in breadth, and from which you can see Harwich at the other side; and there was a frigate of about forty guns anchored in the middle of the arm of the sea.

I addressed myself immediately to the master of the barges, who kept an inn, to take me across the frith; but who, in spite of my prayers, threatenings, and offer to recompense him generously, persisted in refusing it, telling me that the government had prohibited him from taking anybody across after sunset, on account of smuggling, and that that vessel of war was upon the station expressly for preventing it. I was furious and inconsolable to find myself in a situation to lose the opportunity of Lady Jean Douglas after the trouble and pains which it had cost me to resolve on availing myself of it. I lowered my tone of threatening, in the meantime, without gaining anything upon his obstinacy. He answered me that the captain of the ship of war, who was then drinking in his tavern with his officers, would put him in prison if he did it, and his barge would be confiscated.

The captain of the vessel having heard my dispute with the master of the barge, came out of the public-house to question me. I was not put out. I answered that I was a servant of Madame Gray—the name which Lady Jean Douglas had taken to travel with—who ought to be at Harwich actually ready to embark in the first packet boat which should depart for Holland; that she had sent me to London to execute her commissions, and that I was uneasy, fearing that she should have departed before I should be able to

l not to came to became s of her nent the d threw iligence, to sink a that I resented inted in

it was

d rather
p death,
s threatmy life
, as well
e. The
ssolution
any im-

this was

morning, evening.

the profesble Peggy, ween them, is, he never ther name, dident that te—a pious which the l improved is exposed, ared career.

arrive there to give her an account, owing to the obstinacy of the master of the barge, who would not allow me to pass, neither by my offers to recompense him, nor by my threatenings to have him punished by making my complaint to the Governor of Harwich. I begged the captain most earnestly to be so good as exercise his authority, to compel him to do so, and that I should not fail to make a faithful report to my mistress of his kindness. He told me that he had seen my mistress, Madame Gray, arrive the night before; that she appeared very amiable; and that he would be delighted to have it in his power to be of use to her; but that he could do nothing in regard to the master of the barge—that man having particular orders not to allow any one to pass the arm of the sea after sunset. He added that she could not be gone, as the wind was not favourable; and he made offer to take me with him in his shallop, and to put me on shore at Harwich, as soon as he was aboard his vessel. I did not hesitate an instant to accept his offer, and without the least dread, I embarked in his shallop with boldness and hardihood, telling him that my mistress would be most grateful to him for his kindness and civility. I would have been lost without recourse, if I had shown to him timidity or want of confidence.

We were scarcely distant a pistol-shot from the shore, when the captain made me observe in the shallop, one of the midshipmen, named M. Lockhart, and asked me if I knew his family in Scotland. I answered not, and that I had never been in any other service than that of Madame Gray. I was under anxiety, lest Lockhart had recognized me, through the window of the cabin, while I was disputing, and that he had told his captain of it. Having been a comrade at school with his oldest brother, and often at the house of his father, M. Lockhart of Carnwath, he could have been able very easily to recognize me. He was about eighteen years old, and he had been four years in the marine service. His older brother,

stinacy to pass, threatt to the arnestly m to do t to my een my that she thted to he could hat man the arm not be e offer to shore at did not the least ardihood, ul to him st without

the shore, one of the knew his had never by. I was been at he had school with father, M. I was arough the father, M. I was and he had be brother,

of confi-

who was very rich, had been guilty of the same folly as a thousand others in joining himself to Prince Edward. I suffered cruelly by imagining that the captain of the vessel had no other end in view, by his civilities and offer of his shallop, than to conduct me, with little noise on board his ship, and immediately to make me prisoner. The young Lockhart had not known that I had been in the army of Prince Edward. It was a thing too mysterious and equivocal, to see me disguised under the habit of a domestic. I behoved in the meantime to submit to my destiny. Heavens! what a perverse and wretched fate pursued and persecuted me to the last moment that I arrived in Holland! Was I to expect that a similar adventure would await me at Harwich? In proportion as the shallop approached the vessel, I counted the minutes that I had to be free before being garrotted and laid in irons, and my heart palpitated terribly, although I always preserved a tranquil exterior, and while I replied to the thousand questions which the captain asked me, with sang froid, calmness, and presence of mind, without being disconcerted, I expected. nevertheless, at every instant that his politeness would cease, that the mask would be taken off, and that the sailors would have orders to seize me by the throat. This was an adventure that I had experienced since the battle of Culloden which occasioned me the most cruel sufferings and agitations, which I could neither foresee nor prevent without giving up the saving of myself in Holland with Lady Jean Douglas. I had often had in my other awkward encounters some ray of hope of escaping, whether by defending myself, or by the aid of my limbs, but in this I was like a fish caught in a net. At length arrived at the vessel, the captain, being on board, asked me to come and drink a bumper to the health of my mistress. I regarded this as the denouement of the piece. I answered him that I feared I should find my mistress to bed before my arrival at Harwich, and that I had to give her an account of her commissions, which were most pressing. He relieved all at once my sufferings, crying to his seamen to land me at the town, and not to forget his compliments to Madame Gray.

I found Lady Jean Douglas at the inn, and related to her at once the obligation I was under to the captain of the vessel, and the purgatory in which I had been plunged during the passage, on account of his midshipman, the young Lockhart, son of Carnwath, who certainly could not have failed but to recognize me. She bestowed praises upon me for my firmness, and laughed at the singularity of the feat, to have employed the officers of King George to be accomplices in saving a rebel, who had attempted to wrest the crown from their king, to place it on the head of Prince Edward. She said to me that I was certainly born fortunate, and that I should be one day happy. I do not know what star presided at my birth, but my life has only been a continual train of misfortunes, of adversity, of pains, of misery, of flagrant injustices in the service, which are too hard for a man of sensibility to bear, and for an officer experienced in the profession of arms. always ill at ease, and having only a pension from the king to subsist on, of which they cut off the third part. I owe nothing to fortune, which has always persecuted me the most cruelly. Providence has often saved my life, as if by miracle, but it has not been up to the present time to enjoy a well being. I have no more ambition than to have wherewithal to furnish me with a frugal subsistence, to have it assured to me for the few short days that I may remain, and to pass them with a tranquillity and serenity of soul, waiting the last period of my life without fearing or desiring it. I should be content with simple necessaries, and should be happy it spite of perverse and unworthy fortune, which do its favours ordinarily to the most infamous def nortals.

The wind being contrary, reasonable and any sat Harwich before embarking; and any the grown the Governor of that town, to whom Lady Jean Douglas had been recommended, became our annoyance, on account of his polite-

e town,

d to her e vessel, ing the ockhart, d but to irmness, mployed aving a m their e said to nould be l at my misfornjustices bility to of arms, king to I owe the most miracle, y a well rewithal ssured to ass them st period content e of perfavours

ortals.

at Hare Goverhad been
his polite-

ness and civilities. He had received orders from London to be attentive in doing everything in his power to do her pleasure; and he came twenty times a-day, and at every hour, to ask of her if she was not in need of his services. I always shut the door of the room not to be surprised at table with my mistress; and it was quite necessary to leave it to wait until I had had the cloth laid, and till the table was arranged for three persons. Having opened the door to the Governor when every thing was arranged, I took my place as domestic behind the chair of Lady Jean Douglas, and her ladyship having asked the Governor to taste her wine, I served him at drinking. It was easy to see by his physiognomy that he suspected there was some mystery; but it would have been disagreeable if he had lightly occasioned troubles to a person of such illustrious birth, without being sure of his mark. The first letter which I received from my charming Peggy told me that there was a rumour abroad in London that Prince Edward had been saved in Holland with Lady Jean Douglas, disguised as a domestic. It was thus evident that the Governor could have informed the Court of his suspicions; and it was fortunate that we were departed the next day in the morning before he could have been in possession of an answer, to act on.

We arrived at Helvoetsluys in twenty-four hours. I met in with a pleasant scene in the passage. The Chevalier Clifton, who was in the packet boat, being acquainted with M. Stuart, they made him come into the large room which Lady Jean Douglas had hired for herself and her suite, and his lackey and myself remained in a very small ante-chamber, where we were very ill at ease, and obliged often to incommode one another, which rendered us quite cross-grained, and put us in bad humour; being both in bed, our legs continually knocked against each other in the small space where we were packed up, as it were in a prison; above all, as there were a good many passengers, and the weather rainy,

which made it difficult for them to get upon deck, this little chamber was pent up to suffocation. Every one believing the other to be truly lackeys, our answers were always sharp and in a tone of contempt; and certainly the scene would have terminated by some explosion if the hour of dinner of Lady Jean Douglas had not announced M. Clifton, a young gentleman whom she had in her suite, who had been with Prince Edward, whom she wished to make enter the chamber to eat a morsel, M. Clifton said to her that he was in the same condition, and that his lackey, M. Carnie, was an officer in the Irish brigade, in the service of France. She made us enter the chamber to dine, and we being informed of our true state, we were both very much surprised, and made reciprocally a thousand apologies for our ribaldries.

I was absorbed in a profound sleep when the packet boat arrived at the quay of the city of Helvoetsluys, and every one was already on shore, when they came to waken me. I departed instantly from the packet boat with my eyes still half asleep, and I ran with all my might to get out of the way as if the captain and his crew would arrest me, not being able to persuade myself that I was yet beyond the domination of the English. Lady Jean having laughed heartily at seeing me run, she cried to me that it was quite useless, and that I was actually out of danger. I then awoke entirely. How sweet and flattering a moment, beyond expression, to see myself safe, after having been for six months between life and death. It is necessary to have been in my situation to know the excess of pleasure and satisfaction that I experienced in the first instances. Since the battle of Culloden I had it always vividly impressed on my mind that I should finish my days in sufferings on the scaffold. I felt then as if raised from the dead.

After a stay of eight days at Rotterdam, I departed with Lady Jean Douglas for the Hague, and there she fixed her residence. As my resolution had been taken for a long time of

returning to Russia, I wrote to my uncle to let him know in part of the misfortunes into which I was plunged; and begged of him to inform his friends, the Count Gollovine and the Prince Carakin, that I should be at St. Petersburg in the beginning of June; and to endeavour to engage them to honour me still with their protection, in order that I might obtain employment the moment of my arrival. If I had followed that resolution it would not have been many years before I should have been a general officer. I was ready to depart to Russia when Lady Jean Douglas persuaded me to defer my departure until they should receive positive news of the fate of Prince Edward. Cruel and dismal Fortune, which has deceived me through all my life by false appearances *

M. Trevor, the English resident in Holland, having presented a note to the States-General demanding that they

* M. Machiavelli, in citing this passage from Tit. Livy, "adeo obcccat animos fortuna cum vim suam ingruentem refringi non vult," says, "Fortune blinds everybody in a singular manner when she does not wish to be impeded in her designs; and there is nothing more true. Hence men ought not to be so much blamed or praised on account of their adversity or prosperity, for one commonly sees some precipitated to their ruin and others advanced to honours by the force and impulse of their lot, Wisdom being of little importance against the misfortunes of the one, and Folly as little against the felicity of the other. When Fortune premeditates some great affair, she makes choice of some one of courage and capacity, in a condition to discern when she presents to him a favourable opportunity; and, on the other hand, when she projects some great destruction, she has always her instruments ready to drive the wheel and aid her designs, and if there is any one in a condition to counteract her measures, she turns him aside and deprives him of all authority, leaving him impotent to do good, &c. In the meantime, I have learned by the different circumstances of history in general, that there is nothing more true than that men are able to second their fortune, but not to resist it, and to follow the order of her intentions, but not at all to defeat them; nevertheless men ought not to abandon them because they are ignorant of their issues, for her ways being so unknown and so irregular might possibly in the end be for our good; thus we ought always to hope the best, and this hope is for the purpose of sustaining us in the misfortunes and distresses which befal us."

ys sharp e would linner of a young een with chamber as in the was an ce. She informed sed, and

nis little

very one
e. I destill half
way as if
ing able
nation of
at seeing
and that

lries.

ket boat

n, to see ween life situation at I ex-Culloden

v. How

rted with fixed her

g time of

I should

then as

should arrest and deliver into the hands of the English all the Scotch which were escaped into Holland, to the eternal disgrace of that infamous Republic, they were sufficiently mean to consent to it, contrary to humanity and the law of nations. We were then a score of Scotch in Holland. M. Ogilvie was arrested and sent to London; the others departed with all speed from this unworthy country; and as it was necessary for me to remain there to await till I should find an opportunity to go to St. Petersburg, I ran to Leyden to get myself registered in that University in quality of a student of medicine; its privileges being so extensive that the States-General could not dare to arrest a student of that University but for the crime of murder. Having got myself registered by means of some ducats which I paid to Professor Gaubeus, I returned immediately to the Hague, where we learned in a f w days, that Prince Edward was safe in

[&]quot;There is not," says Hobbes, "almost any human action which may not be the commencement of a chain of consequences, so long, that there is no human foresight that could be able to discover the end. Accidents, agreeable and vexatious, are combined in a manner so indissoluble, that every one chooses the agreeable, embracing also necessarily the unpleasant which is joined to it, although he cannot foresee it."—Cited by Cumberland, in his "Philosophical Treatise on Natural Laws." Edin., 4to, page 7. "Such are the marvellous ways," says Robertson, "by which the Divine wisdom directs the caprice of human passions, and makes them subservient to the accomplishment of his own designs."-History of Charles V., vol. v., page 509. "However, it is this caprice of passions which decides the fate of man, and renders him happy or miserable for the rest of his days by a series of effects; and it appears that the will is not free in the choice of the part we take, by a false appearance, taste, inclination, or depression," as says M. Voltaire, "which determine us in our choice by a preference of one thing rather than another, often without knowing why, of which the one conducts to our happiness and prosperity, and the other to render us miserable by plunging us into an abyss of irremediable misfortunes." "Man." says M. Voltaire, in the Norman Orphan, "is not but a point in the universe, a grain of sand driven into the gulf of fortune, or into the abyss of calamities. Our goods and our ills, our pleasures and our pains, often arise as so imperceptible that it is only an eye much exercised that can be able to perceive them."

dish all eternal ficiently law of nd. M. leparted it was should Leyden ity of a ive that of that t myself rofessor here we safe in

here is no its, agreehat every ant which and, in his Such are om directs he accompage 509. man, and series of f the part ," as says ce of one h the one us miser-" Man," the unine abyss of

often arise

cised that

nay not be

The desire of seeing him again, and the hope of an attempt still in his favour, made me abandon my resolution of going to Russia; and my fate was decided for the rest of my days by my arrival at Paris towards the end of the year 1746. The pleasures of that city made me immediately forget my past troubles, and blinded me even to the future. I remained there in a kind of lethargy, allowing opportunities of being advantageously settled in Russia or in Spain to escape, in the hope that the Court of France would still make some attempt in favour of Prince Edward to re-establish his affairs in Scotland; and it was not till the Prince was arrested in 1748, and conveyed beyond the realm, in consequence of the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, that I opened my eyes, forced then to think of the means of subsistence and of obtaining a situation. Madame the Marchioness of Mezieres Douairiere and Lady Ogilvie having recommended me strongly to M. the Marquis of Puysieulx, then secretary of state for foreign affairs, that minister took me immediately particularly under his protection, and granted me during the year 1749 two thousand two hundred livres from the fund of forty thousand livres which His Majesty had granted to be distributed in annual gifts to the unfortunate Scotch, who had had the good fortune of saving themselves in France, with the loss of their estates, and to escape perishing on the scaffold in England.

Seeing M. Puysiculx very well disposed in my favour, and believing that I should still farther ingratiate myself in his esteem and good graces, by entering into the service, in order to render my youth useful, rather than live at Paris in idleness, under the bounty of the king, which this minister had caused me to obtain, I begged him to let me have a company of infantry at St. Domingo or at Martinique. All the Scotch in the suite of Prince Edward having been placed by M. the Count of Argenson with the same rank in the service of France which they had with the Prince in Scotland,

and being an old captain in his army by my commission of date the 21st of September, 1745, which the Prince had given me the very evening of the Battle of Gladsmuir (Prestonpans), as soon as we were on our return from Pinkey House, where he passed the night, I has every hope of receiving the same treatment; the more so as the Marquis of Eguille, the ambassador of France to Prince Edward in Scotland, had given repeated assurances to every one, that in case our expedition should terminate unfavourably, all our commissions from Prince Edward would be ratified by the King of France, and that all those who should be saved in France should have the same rank in the service of that Crown as they had had in the army of that Prince in Scotland. But M. Rouille, newly elected minister of marine, and more conversant with the commerce of the Indies than with military affairs, in place of granting me the request of M. Puysieulx, to have my company, caused make out for me a commission as ensign in the troops attached to the marine, at the Isle Royal. I refused it at first with indignation and obstinacy, not being able to endure the thought of that humiliating and revolting degradation of an officer who had served well; and it was not but on the repeated orders of M. Puysieulx, joined to his assurances not to leave me a long time shamefully with a subaltern's commission, after having served at the head of my company during the whole expedition of Prince Edward in Scotland, of which the progress we had there made, and the battles we had gained, against forces greatly superior in number, had attracted the attention and astonishment of all Europe, that I consented in the end to accept it. I departed forthwith to Rochefort, with full confidence in the promises of M. Puysicula, to wait there for my embarkment to the Isle Royal, the worst place there is in the world.

I found at Rochefort three newly appointed officers, in the Chevalier Montalambert, the Chevalier Trion, his cousin, and M. Frene, who had obtained their complements also for ssion of d given Preston-House, ving the ille, the nd, had ar expemissions France, e should they had Rouille, ant with ffairs, in have my ensign in I refused g able to g degras not but nis assurh a subad of my Edward nade, and sperior in ent of all departed promises

officers, in his cousin, as also for

nt to the

Isle Royal. Friendships are easily contracted among military men, and the same destination attached us with mutual sentiments of friendship, so much the more that all the three were of excellent character and of the sweetest society. Our embarkation having been ordered to be in the "Iphigenie," a merchant vessel freighted for the king, belonging to M. Michel Roderick, a ship master of Rochelle, we departed immediately from Rochefort, and on our arrival at Rochelle, we found the crew of the "Iphigenie" revolted, with the carpenter at their head, who wished to make their declarations at the Admiralty that the vessel was entirely unseaworthy and not at all in a state to continue the voyage. Roderick asked us to dinner, and during the repast he never ceased to assure us that his vessel was excellent, that if he should go himself to Louisbourg, of which he was a native, he should embark therein with his family, in preference to every other ship of Rochelle, and that the bad reputation of the "Iphigenie" was the effect of jealousy of his brother shipmasters, who had seduced his crew and excited them to revolt. specious was the persuasive eloquence of Roderick, my companions did not place entire confidence in his deluding words, but I was his dupe in full. Thus could it ever be imagined that there existed on earth a man so depraved and devoid of all feeling of humanity who, for vile lucre's sake, could expose nearly three hundred persons to perish; having with us two hundred recruits, besides a great many passengers and the crew. Persuaded myself of the good faith of Roderick, I had no great difficulty in bringing over my companions to my opinion that it was only jealousy of the shipowners, who had raised these disadvantageous reports of the "Iphigenie," and having allayed the sedition of the sailors, we all embarked on the 28th of June, 1750, and on the 29th, St. Peter's Day, we weighed anchor at the break of day, and departed immediately in fine weather and with a favourable wind.

The next day after our departure, having doubled Cape

Finisterre, we were convinced when too late of the perfidy and bad faith of Roderick, and of the folly of which we had been guilty in believing him. The "Iphigenie," which, according to the declaration of the crew during their mutiny, had made twelve feet of water per hour in the harbour of Rochelle, being then in full sea, took twenty-four feet per hour; and Fremont, the captain of the vessel, who could no longer conceal the deplorable state of the ship, came to ask an arrangement with us to have our soldiers continually to pump and work the ship. The crew, which consisted only of forty seamen, good and bad, was not sufficient for it. We had the half of our detachment of two hundred men, of which M. Montalambert had the command, who took their turn with the sailors, sixty of whom were ordered to the pump, to be relieved at every quarter of an hour by the others on the muster roll, by turns. A short time after, we had again a frightful proof of the total rottenness of our ship by the loss of our mizenmast, which fell upon the deck, and did not fail in its fall to drag after it our main-mast, the socket, rotten like the rest of the ship, having given way. The foot of the mizen-mast entered the cabin, plunging rapidly through the partition wall. M. Montalambert, who at that moment was opposite, escaped as by a miracle from being crushed, by jumping aside. It was still more fortunate that this disaster happened to us at nine o'clock in the morning, during very fine weather, and with a light favourable breeze, which enabled the sailors to stop up in a short time the rents of the hold, and the mast, and the shrouds: otherwise we would have run a very great risk of perishing on the spot.

All our hopes of being able to escape death were in the arms of our two hundred soldiers, and in the fine weather we had, in place of hoping to have, in the fine season. Vain hopes as to the weather! We had continually to experience blasts of wind the most violent, as if we had been in the very midst of winter, one amongst the others, to the height of

mountains, carried off our top-masts and our sails, by shivering them as sheets of paper, and a swell of the sea drowned our sheep and fowls, and our other provisions.

To complete our miseries, our water, which, by an atrocious and hateful rascality of Roderick, had been put into old casks where there had been formerly wine, became so completely corrupt in less than six weeks after our departure, turned black as ink, thick as paste, and so truly infectious as to be no longer fit to be drunk. But these were the least of our misfortunes, compared to our frightful and deplorable situation, having death always before our eyes, and the idea continually impressed strongly on the mind that the "Iphigenie" should plunge us some day into the deep sea; and when the wind was favourable, they durst not attempt to navigate the ship but with very small sails, fearing lest our other two masts should tumble as our mizen-mast had done. Thus we were without a prospect of quickly seeing a favourable termination to our cruel distresses and sufferings; but on the contrary, that they would be of long duration, and that we should be for a long time between life and death.

Having experienced nine different squalls of wind since the 29th of June, that we were at sea, heaven reserved us still for the tenth, a furious tempest on the 10th of September, the most frightful. We had a dead calm during the whole day of the 9th, but at midnight the wind began to rise, and continued to increase until it became a perfect hurricane, and of the most incredible violence. Foaming, it descended the cabin at nine o'clock in the morning, to warn us to prepare for death. It told us that there was no other hope of saving ourselves and avoiding to be immediately swallowed up by the sea but by paying our vows. It added that the crew should come to make one to St. Nicholas, with a promise to chant a grand mass at Louisbourg, if it pleased God to deliver us from the imminent danger in which we were; and it invited us to join ours to theirs, as our only

with the be remuster rightful mizens fall to the rest en-mast on wall. escaped It was

at nine

with a

stop up

and the

risk of

in the

her we

erience

he very

ight of

Vain

perfidy

we had

ich, ac-

mutiny,

bour of

r hour:

longer

an ar-

mp and

rty sea-

nad the

ich M.

resource for preserving existence. Weak and melancholy resource! In the meantime we demanded from every one a crown of six francs to be put into the contribution which the sailors were making for this grand mass.*

I crawled upon the deck to see what state we were in. My eyes were not able to support but for an instant the horribly frightful views of the sea, which formed monstrous surges like to mountains, sharp and moving, forming many tiers of hills. From their summits rose up grand jets of foam, which sparkled like the colour of the rainbow. They were so elevated that our vessel seemed down in a valley at the foot of the mountains, every surge threatening our destruction, and to precipitate us to the bottom of these vast abvsses.† It is a beautiful and majestic horror which one would view with admiration in looking upon it on the earth. We were at the Cape without sails; the ship could not carry any. which rendered the rolling terrible was the ship being carried in the water at every surge in a manner certainly calculated to discover the keel on the opposite side. One must have tried to make weigh without a sail of the misery of lightening the ship, but she was carried away immediately by the wind like a sheet of paper.

Having regained the cabin as fast as I could, but not

* "Bursts as a wave that from the clouds impends,
And swelled with tempests on the ship descends,
White are the decks with foam; the winds aloud
Howl o'er the masts, and sing through every shroud;
Pale, trembling, tired, the sailors freeze with fears,
And instant death on every wave appears."

—Homer's Illiad, Book XV., Line 752, Pope's Translation. † Having experienced violent squalls of wind in the Baltic Sea, in returning from Russia on board of Walker's vessel, where the whole crew was composed of English, the difference which I found between the English sailors and the French sailors is that the English swear and work at the same time till the last moment, and as long as they have the head above the water, but the French have more confidence in their prayers than in their arms. It appears to me that a middle course would not be amiss.

ancholy ery one n which

in. My
horribly
s surges
tiers of
n, which
were so
the foot
tion, and
† It is
iew with
e at the
. That
g carried
alculated

but not

ust have

ghtening

the wind

Franslation. Sea, in ree crew was he English ork at the head above ers than in amiss.

without difficulty, and without bruises, I there found M. Frene, who knocked with great handcuffs against the partition. "Zounds," said he to me, "is it not terrible to perish in this manner after having escaped an infernal fire at the assault of Berg-op-zoom with the grenadiers of the regiment of Lowendhal?" M. Montalambert let fly tranquilly a torrent of tears. The Chevalier de Trion, a young man of about twenty years of age, who appeared less affected with our unhappy lot, said to me that he had made his peace before our departure from Rochefort. It seemed that the more one had lived, the more ought one to regret to quit life. This would have been a beautiful subject for a painter, to represent the contrasts in the characters, which even the same event affected differently. I was resigned to die, as I had always been in all my misadventures during the time that I had fled the scaffold; that is to say, submitting myself with patience to a fatal destiny which there was no means of evading, sooner or later; for human nature trembles at its destruction in health and in cold blood.* I had a great appearance of tranquillity outwardly, but the mind was at the same time lacerated and tormented to imagine what would be the last fall of the curtain, by which we were shortly going to be enlightened. They came to inform us that Fremont had fallen down dead, but this was only a fainting fit, which passed away at the end of a quarter of an hour. It was the ambition of this foolish animal to command a ship, which had plunged us into this disaster; and he was as lazy and without spirit in dangers, as he was insolent and impertinent when it was fine weather.

I passed all the day reading the Psalms of David, and

^{*} Man, let him be who he may, is never glad to die, when he is able without disgrace to prolong his days, which are not a burden to him. Virtue, labour, love, duty, glory, and patriotism, may well enable him to face death, but he retains always at the bottom of his heart, that natural repugnance which makes him tremble, as it were against himself, when he sees close to him the fatal moment, which is to deprive him of life. The most intrepid man will not dony me this, if he is sincere.

plunged at the same time, into continual reflections on a future existence and the immortality of the soul. I recollected what had been said by Wollaston, who appears to me the most satisfactory of all those I have read upon the subject, of which no mortal shall ever be able to unveil the darkness that covers it.*

* "This faculty of thought," says Wollaston, in his Outline of Natural Religion, "which many persons talk to us of, as a quality added by the almighty power of God to divers systems of Nature disposed to receive it. ought necessarily, although they always call it so, to denote a substance given to the faculty of thought; for the faculty of thought of itself alone is not sufficient to form the idea of soul, which is itself endowed with many other faculties, such as are those of perceiving, of reflecting, of comparing, of judging, of weighing the consequences, and of reasoning, of wishing, of communicating motion to the body, of preserving by its presence the exercise of the animal functions, and of giving life. This is why all that which is added to matter ought to be endowed with these other faculties; and I leave to people who are not hindered the care of deciding, if the faculty of thought and the other faculties of which we have made the enumeration. are simply the faculties of one faculty, or if they are not rather faculties of a substance, which being by their own admission added to matter, ought consequently to be different. But matter can neither think nor was made to think; for when the faculty of thought is capable of being added to a system of matter, without being joined with an immaterial substance. still the body of man is not such a system, because it is certain that it does not think, and that it is organized in a manner to transmit impressions which it receives of sensible objects even to the brain, where it is beyond doubt that there resides that which perceives these impressions and reflects on them; that is why that which in the brain perceives, thinks, wishes, &c., ought to be the system of matter to which is added the faculty of thinking; that the inhabitant is a thinking substance intimately united to some material vehicle very delicate which resides in the brain. The whole is reduced to this-First, the soul of man is a substance which thinks, which is clothed in a material vehicle, or rather that it is united to it, and which is as it were inseparably mixed with it, I was going to say almost incorporated. Second, This soul and this vehicle act in concert, and that which makes an impression upon the one makes also upon the other. Third, The soul is contained in the body, in the head, or in the brain, by some sympathy or attraction which is between it, and its material receptacle, until some evil accident, some disease, &c., causes the body to fall to ruins, destroy the dwelling of the soul, interrupting the course of natural coherence, which exists between it and its receptacle, or that its tendency is perhaps changed into some antipathy which force has involved it in. Fourth, By

d what e most ject, of less that

Natural d by the occive it, ubstance f alone is ith many mparing, shing, of the exerhat which es; and I faculty of meration. aculties of er, ought was made added to substance, nat it does ions which ond doubt reflects on ishes, &c., thinking; to some e whole is aks, which d which is t incorpothat which Third, The sympathy until some ns, destroy coherence, is perhaps

Fourth, By

Towards three o'clock after mid-day, a wave stove in the port holes of the cabin and tumbled upon the Chevalier Trion, who was sleeping in his bed the length of the windows. As his bed was soaked with the sea water, I made him lie down with me in the cabin, which they had given me, at my entry into the saloon. It was with difficulty that we could get our

means of this vehicle, the momentum and impressions are communicated through all parts of the body. Prop. 8, The soul of man subsists after dissolution of the body; that is to say, it is immortal. If it is immaterial, it is indivisible, and is in consequence incapable of being destroyed as bodies are. Such a body cannot perish but by annihilation; that is to say, it will always subsist and always continue to be, yet a being capable of being annihilated, but not annihilating itself by a particular act; this act by which a substance shall be reduced to nothing requires without doubt the same power as that by which nothing is changed into something. To introduce a body of matter endowed with the faculty of thought, or actually thinking, this is to introduce a body of matter endowed with a new property and contrary to matter; and this is to introduce a new kind of matter, as essentially different from common matter, and deprived of the faculty of thinking as some kind let it be what it may, differs from its opposite in the shelter of predicaments, and as the body itself differs from the spirit; for a being endowed with the faculty of thinking and another which is deprived of it, differ as essentially as corporeal beings differ from incorporeal; if this is so, thinking matter ought to continue to think. Why does not our soul perceive exterior objects during sleep, or during the time of fainting? It is because the tubes have become impracticable; that all the avenues are shut, because the nerves being deranged and rendered in some manner useless, are for some time not in a condition to transmit or make known to the soul the impressions made by them; we are able to deduce the immortality of our souls and the nature even of God; for if he is, as no one can doubt, a perfect being, he cannot as such make anything contrary to right and perfect reason," (and we may add that he cannot cease to be a sentient as well as a thinking being, which he has been from all eternity and must ever remain. -ED.) "It is therefore impossible that he should be the cause of a being or the condition of a being, whose existence should be repugnant to reason; or which comes to the same thing, it is impossible that he should act unreasonably with the beings which depend upon his power. If we are of the number of these beings, and if the mortality of our soul is repugnant to right reason, this is sufficient to make us convinced that it is immortal, or he who made the soul of man mortal must confess one of two things, either that God is a being unreasonable, unjust, and cruel; or that every one in this life, which is subject to adversity, has not participated in soldiers to remain at the pump, and in fact these poor unfortunates had much to suffer, for at every instant the waves gushed over them with violence, and often swept them into the sea. The Chevalier Trion made constant bulwarks between the decks to cause them mount on high, the serjeants at this critical moment having lost all their authority over

a greater proportion of misery than of felicity; to advance the first of these propositions would be to contradict a truth which I flatter myself to have put beyond doubt. I can, nevertheless, add here that this would be to entertain so unworthy and so impious a notion of the Supreme Being that no person would wish to entertain it, without a very great foundation for the last of men, and that the man who defends this opinion knows it to be false; for he cannot fail to see and recognise many and incontestible examples of the justice and goodness of God, of which no one, however, could see one, if cruelty and injustice entered into the character of the Supreme Being, since he has the power perfectly to satisfy his wishes, and that he is a being uniform in his nature. To allow the second member of the dilemma, this would be to give the lie to the universal history of the world, and even to the internal feelings of all men. Let us consider maturely the terrible offects attending wars, &c." (See page 8.) "How could one, then, exculpate the justice and the reason of the being, upon which these unfortunate creatures depend, and who would make them by annihilating them suffer losses so considerable, if there is not any future life, where there will be a just reward for all their past troubles? We draw, in short, from this argument these incontestible consequences, if the soul is mortal, or it is not from God upon whom it should be dependent, or if this God is unreasonable, or if there never has been a man whose sufferings in this world not having been through his own fault, having surpassed the pleasures which he has enjoyed, or certainly these three propositions are equally untenable -- therefore the soul is immortal." J. J. Bourlamaqui says, to prove the immortality of the soul-"Such is the nature of expediency, and that one truth little known by itself acquires force by its natural combination with other truths more known. So natural philosophers doubt not that they have found the true when an hypothesis happily explains all the phenomena, and an event little known in history does not appear doubtful, when one sees that it serves as the key and the sole base of many other events more certain."-(Principles of Natural Right.) "It is flattering to imagine the immortality of the soul, but alas! as says Diderot, when one has placed human recognition in the balance of Montaigne, one is not far from taking his estimate. For what do we know, that it is but matter? By no means. What is it but spirit and thought? Still less. Is it motion, space, duration? Not at all. Question mathematicians, in good faith, and they will confess to you that their propositions are all identical."-Letter upon Saunders.

unforwaves em into arks beerjeants ty over

t of these

If to have

to enter-

g that no on for the

s it to be

stible ex-

ver, could Supreme

that he is

dilemma,

, and even

he terrible nen, excul-

nfortunate

hem suffer

e will be a this argu-

is not from

sonable, or

not having

iich he has ble--ther**e**-

the immor-

one truth

with other have found

ena, and an

sees that it

certain."-

nortality of recognition

mate. For

nat is it but

Not at all. to you that them; and it was not but by threatening and maltreating them that it was possible to obtain the end. They always answered, "that to perish was but to perish, but it was better to perish on the quarter deck than to be swept away by the waves, or crushed to death on the deck." We had many of our soldiers wounded, the surges of the sea coming on deck with astonishing force, throwing them often from one side of the ship to the other.

Towards six o'clock at night, our carpenter, who was a pleasant original, and a true harlequin, but very active and laborious at work, having remained working before the door of my cabin, where I was lying in bed with the Chevalier Trion, having asked him if he had anything new to communicate, he answered us-"Ah! yes, gentlemen, great news-very great news! The fore part of the ship is open, and the water is actually entering it in bucketfuls;—the soldiers having wrought a long time at the pumps without being able to deliver it, it is at length broken; and there fell upon the deck a wave which covered their clothes with sand. Thus, gentlemen, we shall be quickly at the devil; in less than an hour we shall all drink of the same cup." It is singular that there are characters capable of pleasantry even to the last moment of life; while there are other persons whom the sight of danger deprives of all sensibility, and who are dead a long time before it comes to pass.

The depression and weariness of my spirits, absorbed all the day in reflections the most serious, made me assume a drowsiness which I wished greatly to encourage. My conscience—as a Chinese author defines it, that internal and concealed light, page 34, &c., Ext.—not reproaching me with enormous crimes, but only such as the heat and giddiness of youth would occasion, through thoughtlessness, I said to the Chevalier Trion that I should be most happy if I could make the passage to the other world sleeping; that I wished to try it. I took leave of him, embraced him, and having

turned my face to the partition wall, I fell immediately into the most profound sleep, without being interrupted by the frequent comings and goings out of my cabin which the Chevalier Trion occasioned in order to animate and make our soldiers work; and I continued in one sound sleep from halfpast six o'clock at night, till seven o'clock the next day in the morning. On my awakening I believed myself more in the other world than in this. The Chevalier immediately said to me, how happy I was; that through the whole night they expected the moment when the vessel would sink to the bottom; and that I had escaped greatly the cruel sufferings which I would have experienced had I been awake; that they had bound the ship round with cables to prevent her from breaking asunder altogether; that as soon as the carpenter had repaired the pamp, the soldiers, who had wrought all the night like madmen, had come in the end to free her; that the wind and the sea had much abated; and for once they believed us out of danger. There is only but a very short space between pain and pleasure. Fine weather, with a favourable wind, which at ten o'clock in the morning succeeded the tempest, revived our spirits immediately, fatigued by their sufferings, which they forgot more easily than these enjoyments.

We had often doubted whether Fremont was an ignorant or a bad sailor; but in the end we were convinced that his ignorance would have cost us dear. M. Lion, who was second in command of the "Iphigenie," told us that by his iournal we were very near to the land of the Royal Island, though by the journal of Fremont we were yet distant from it two hundred leagues. This gave us uneasiness; but in reality it would have been a very melancholy fate to perish among the rocks, with which ail this coast is surrounded, at the moment when we had been saved from the tempest. I determined to pass the whole night on deck; and I said to my companions, that as they had watched for my safety during

tely into l by the hich the nake our om halfay in the re in the ly said to ight they k to the sufferings ake; that event her the card wrought free her; for once ut a very ther, with morning mediately,

n ignorant
ed that his
who was
hat by his
yal Island,
stant from
ss; but in
to perish
counded, at
empest. I
said to my
lety during

ore easily

the time that I had enjoyed a profound sleep the past night, I, in my turn, would do the same for them. We were all much more inclined to believe M. Lion than the other; and we begged him to remain on deck with me till the break of day. It was a very fine starlight night, without the moon; but there was a clearness all the night in the heavens like a twilight, to make it possible to distinguish at a considerable distance. M. Lion, having placed a seaman on the poop of the ship to look out continually a-head, oh, heavens! what was our joy when this sailor, towards two o'clock in the morning of the 12th of September, cried to us that he saw land. I ran there with M. Lion, and in less than ten minutes we saw it very distinctly at a distance of about three hundred toises. They immediately tacked about to port the helm, and I descended quickly into the saloon to convey the good news to my comrades, awakening them as agreeably as they had done me the night before. When it was great daylight, Fremont, who had already made one voyage to Louisbourg pretended to recognise this land perfectly as Indienne, a settlement of the Royal Isle, about six leagues north of Louis' ourg; and he bore towards the south. reason to believe that we should easily reach Louisbourg, in the course of the day, we got on our things, holding ourselves quite ready to land; but at three o'clock in the afternoon, being at the entry of a port which Fremont took for the port, so long time ardently desired, he cried to a boat which passed near to us, if this was not the port of Louisbourg? They answered by demanding the name of the ignorant sot who commanded the ship who mistook Louisbourg for the port of Toulouse, a settlement about twenty leagues to the south of Louisbourg. Thus they knew but too late, that it was the port of Louisbourg, which we saw in the morning, but which a fatal destiny had put a blind before Fremont's eyes, and which drove us to despair. I insisted much with Montalambert to land at the port of Tculouse with our detachment,

and make the road by land; but Fremont affrightened him by declaring that if he took that course, he would be responsible for the cargo. We were in the meantime quite in a condition to make it, viewing the vile state of the ship and the danger to which we were exposed, if we were driven forward by an adverse wind. In short, having throughout the whole night fine weather, and a light favourable wind, we entered into the port of Louisbourg the next morning, the 13th of September, to the great astonishment of all the inhabitants of that city, who believed that we had perished. A small vessel left at the same time that we did from Rochelle, on board of which there were embarked Madame Hagette and two officers of the colony, which had had a passage of fifty days in place of sixty and sixteen, that we were on the sea, had reported to them the bad state of our ship; and the quays were swarming with people who looked with surprise and admiration at the dilapidated state of the "Iphigenie," coming in front of us to congratulate us on our fortunate deliverance. The next day, the crew of our vessel made a procession quite naked, and having nothing but their shirts on their backs, all the way to the church, where grand mass was chanted, without sparing any expense, in consequence of their vows during the storm. They wished to take back the "Iphigenie" to France, but the crew having complained to the Admiralty, they caused her to be inspected, and she was condemned immediately to be cut in pieces.*

^{*}We were a long time at Louisbourg before being informed of the powerful patronage of the "Iphigenie." Roderick was in partnership with M. Prevot, commissary of ordnance at the Royal Isle, and then with M. Prevot, first commissioner of the marine chamber. Hence it is not astonishing that the inspectors at Rochefort shut their eyes to the condition of the ships, which they freighted for the king; and the unfortunate sailors would have been obliged to return to France in this rotten ship, if the officers of the admiralty had not had more uprightness and humanity than the owners, who, supposing the "Iphigenie" sunk to the bottom of the sea, would have had nothing lost but the ship and cargo, the whole being insured to their full value, perhaps even to a profit. What monsters does the love of gain produce!

As to Fremont, who had not ceased to give us his imper-

respontinence during the whole voyage, the first time that he landed ite in a on the shore, I caused him make another procession, along the ship and whole length of the quay, with cudgel strokes, to the great ven fordivertisement of all the corps of officers of the Royal Isle, nout the but above all to the great satisfaction of my companions of rind, we the voyage, who had partaken daily with myself of his fooling, the ishness and insolences. This was a laughable scene. He I the indrew at first his sword, but whether it was that he feared hed. A that I should break the blade of it with my stick, which was Rochelle, very thick and weighty, or whether that he dreaded receiving Hagette the strokes upon his face every time that I lifted the baton, assage of he made a half turn to the right, presenting to me his shoulwere on ders, with the best grace in the world, to receive them, which ur ship; certainly ought to have felt the force of them for a long ked with time. I have always seen impertinence and cowardice insee of the parably together; for a man truly brave is inoffensive, and us on our never insults any one, although violent when people do him our vessel injuries. M. Coppinot, staff-major of Louisbourg, who saw us at the beginning, retired aside to leave me at liberty, and but their did not return to order me to give up, until he believed that ere grand in conse-Fremont had got enough. I applied the strokes with a great ed to take deal of force and with good will, as he was the cause of all ving comthe bad blood which we had in this long and painful voyage, inspected, by concealing from us at Rochelle the miserable condition of eces.* his vessel, so thoroughly rotten that they would have been able to pierce the timbers with their fingers. rmed of the

ed him

nership with ith M. Pe '9,

onishing that

of the ships,

s would have officers of the

the owners,

, would have

ared to their

love of gain

Before a year's sojourn at Louisbourg, I was plainly convinced of the folly I had not itted in accepting a commission of ensigncy, by my such that the order of M. Puysieulx, and by the hope of patronage. The despatches of the court having arrived, there was no mention in them of my promotion, and M. Puysieulx having quitted the department of foreign affairs, his successor, M. de St. Contest, had not immediately put me on the list of annual allowances granted by

His Majesty to the Scotch in the suite of Prince Charles Edward. What a strange lot! Having been attached to the artillery, with my company during the expedition in Scotland, in a fixed escort, although my commission of captain did not make mention of that appointment, Prince Edward, in the statement which he gave to the Court of France of his officers, having given me the title of captain of artillery, I received twelve hundred livres in 1746; I had it augmented in 1749 to two thousand some hundred livres; and in 1751 I found myself at Louisbourg, the only one of the Scotch fully reduced to an Ensign, through the ignorance of M. Rouille of military affairs, who had sent to the Royal Isle incompetent officers to occupy the vacant companies and lieutenancies, while he denied me the justice of ratifying my commission of captain by Prince Edward, which the Count of Argenson had conceded to all my comrades, not having, at the same time, but four hundred and twenty-four livres per annum, which did not suffice for paying my lodging in the most miserable garret of Louisbourg. Blind Fortune moves itself in a singular manner, and drives us in spite of ourselves to the lot which she has destined for us. If I have not succeeded in procuring for myself a livelihood to the end of my days, I cannot accuse myself of an error in judgment, in the means that I employed for attaining it; for when I recall all the past, I do not see that I could have been able to act otherwise than I have done; and if it were to do over again, I would follow the same illusions, as having the appearance of being the most reasonable. Man does not know to judge and take the best possible course, under appearances the most clearly favourable, to conduct him to the results which he proposes to himself, if by effects, whimsical and impossible to foresee, the road he takes, founded upon probability, appears to be the best for conducting to the result, turns out quite the contrary, what can he do but look upon himself as a grain of sand driven by Chance, that unjust

Charles

to the

otland.

did not

in the

is offi-

eceived n 1749

found

illy re-

uille of

petent ancies,

sion of

genson

same

st mis-

self in

to the

ceeded

lays, I

means all the

other-

gain, I

nce of judge

s the

mpos-

bility, as out

him-

mjest

tyrant which governs and disposes at his caprice all the actions of men. The climax of the misery which must necessarily actually pursue me even to the end of my days, and which it is beyond the power of fortune itself to remedy now at my age, was to have consented to take a commission of ensigncy in 1750 under the reiterated promises of M. Puysieulx, to watch continually to procure me a company without delay; M. Rouille being then, according to all appearance, the only minister of all the Courts of Europe who could have disgraced the commission of Prince Edward, by thus degrading a captain of his Scottish army, the progress of which against the whole united troops of England produced the astonishment and admiration of all Europe.

How could I fail to have had confidence in the promises of M. Puysieulx after his having given me proofs the most convincing of his esteem and good graces? He had given me in 1749 two thousand two hundred livres from the funds granted to Scotchmen; and this minister was so well disposed in my favour, that if I had demanded of him a permanent situation of five hundred livres per annum out of this fund, he would have granted it to me readily. Might it not naturally be believed, that the desire which I had shown to render my youth serviceable to the king and the country, deserved much rather rewards than punishments! Is it an equal merit in a man to pass his days at Paris in idleness and pleasure, as I would have been able to do with my pension on the Scottish list, or to embrace a situation the most painful, like that of a military man, who performs well his duties; exposed continually to dangers of all kinds, his body overwhelmed with excess of fatigues, and his constitution ruined by bad nourishment, joined to a thousand other inconveniences which necessarily follow the hard work of war? Could I have ever imagined that in the service of France one would see lazy officers, who do no other service but pillage and rob the king, and being enriched by rapine, are received with open

arms in the bureau at Versailles; at the same time that the son of a pastry cook, and another son of a hairdresser, are made to pass right over officers who have served with disinterestedness, who have only occupied themselves continually for the good of the service, and to render themselves useful?* I confess that I could have never been able to form an idea of the service of France, such as I have experienced it; having always believed that honour, sentiments, and a great knowledge of the military art, were the only means of succeeding in any service of the world.

M. Herbiers having obtained leave from the Court to be relieved, the king's vessel "Happy," commanded by the Chevalier Caumont, was sent to Louisbourg with the Count de Raimond, to replace him in the government of the Royal Isle, and to bring him back to France. Seeing the forgetfulness and neglect of my patrons to procure me a suitable situation, joined to the impossibility of being able to live at Louisbourg upon four hundred and twenty-four livres of salary, this worthy and gentlemanly man, who had received me into his friendship, having taken upon himself to cause me to enter into an agreement with my new governor, to return with him to Europe in the "Happy," obtained at the same time the permission of M. Caumont for me to embark at once ten or twelve days before the vessel should sail, in order to repair the bad fare which I had had during a year at Louisbourg, which ordinarily consisted during the winter solely of cod-fish and hog's lard, and during the summer, fresh fish, bad rancid salt butter, and bad oil. Cross adventures were familiar to me, without fortune ever having mixed with them the fortunate! Two hours after I had gone on board, at the instant that we were about to place ourselves at table for supper, the vessel was almost blown up in the air; and in a little, if there had been the least wind, we would have never been able to avoid that dismal fate. A vessel at anchor beside the "Happy" had taken

^{*} Messieurs Berranger et Coutereau.

nat the

er, are

h dis-

nually

eful?*

n idea

ed it:

great

f suc-

be re-

evalier

mond.

and to

nd ne-

joined

gupon

ny and

dship,

agree-

ope in

of M.

before

which

narily

s lard.

er, and

ortune

hours about

ilmost

en the

t dis-

taken

fire, laden with rum and oil, and in an instant the ship was all in flames, like the great fire of a furnace. All the ships' boats of the port were collected together quickly with grappling irons to haul back the ship on fire, and make her get to a side, beyond the reach of communicating the fire to others; but it was with difficulty that we were saved, this ship having passed alongside our board quite close by. If the grappling irons had been awanting, we were gone.* We being replaced at table as soon as the danger was passed, the dear and worthy man, M. Herbiers, told us that during the time that this catastrophe lasted, he could not help thinking continually of me, how it should happen unfortunately for me to embark precisely at the point of time to encounter death.

We sailed from Louisbourg in the month of August, 1751, and we arrived in fifty days in the bay of Rochelle, having experienced in the passage but one squall of wind, which endured forty-eight hours, and which alarmed greatly the officers of the ship; but as it was very far below for the most part those which I had experienced the year before, in the "Iphigenie," the vessel being good and in a condition to resist, I was not otherwise disquieted than by the interruption which it occasioned to our good cheer; for while it lasted it was impossible to cook, and we were reduced to bacon, with biscuits, in place of fresh bread.

* It is incredible the disorder that prevailed in the vessel during this alarm. Some crying to let go the cable, others to cut it, one heard a hundred voices with different orders, and nobody doing anything, the crew not knowing whom to obey. It appears to me that if I commanded a vessel in such imaginent danger with a pair of pistols before me, I should cause perfect silence be observed, to enable the orders of the captain to be heard and executed.

† There were twenty officers on board the "Happy," which carried sixty four guns, and one above all called Bordet, a great sailor, but a great drunkard, and always tipsy from seven o'clock in the morning; the others were very different from him, and had so great a deference for him and confidence in his knowledge, that they made him mount upon the deck, to command the working of the ship even during a gale of wind, but not being steady on his legs, they caused him sit down upon an arm chair, from

Having arrived at Paris, I did my best to get myself reinstated upon the list of bounties granted to the Scotchmen of the suite of Prince Edward, being then well persuaded of the great folly I had been guilty of in quitting it; but M. St. Contest always replied to all my patrons, that they ought to break the neek of this young man, who would be able to rise in the service. Seeing my small hope of success, I turned all my efforts to get a company; and M. Rouille was spiritedly solicitous in my favour, through M. Puysieulx, Prince Constantine of Rohan, now Cardinal, the Prince Montauban his brother, Lord Thomond, and by Lord Marechal, who was the friend of my uncle in Russia, and then ambassador at Paris of the King of Prussia. If I had had then as perfect a knowledge of cabinets as I have since had by experience, I should have been much better able to succeed, with much less patronage; but I did not then know all the power of clerks, the beaten tracks which it was necessary to follow in order to obtain anything, and the irresistable assistance of petticoats, which forces and opens all the barriers to fortune. Knowing even this marvellous key, through which to obtain all, well founded or ill founded, I never found myself the better of it. M. Rouille gave them all the assurances possible to grant their request in my favour, and M. de la Porte assured me at the same time that I should find my commission waiting me

whence he gave forth his orders like an Emperor on his throne. It is incredible the magnificence of the table on board the French men-of-war, served with all the elegance that it is possible to do on land, which the captains of English vessels would never be able to imitate, for as soon as they receive orders to sail with the first favourable wind, of which they render an account to the Admiralty, which they do daily in all the ports of England, they are not allowed to remain longer, as the French ships are obliged to do, some times during three weeks, to wait for provisions to the table; and the English captains are often sufficiently unfortunate as to be obliged to content themselves with salt beef and bacon like the sailors, with this difference, that the captains have the choice of the pieces. It is true that the Commissioners of the Admiralty take great care that the provisions of the ships should be of good quality, well conditioned, and in good case.

at Louisbourg on my arrival there. This minister sent me at the end of May, an order to depart for Rochfort; and M. St. Contest having given me a supply to defray in part the expense of my voyage, I proceeded thither immediately, but with no confidence in their promises, for I had believed the same before, in the preceding year, and once deceived, I with difficulty relied upon them; but I could not see any other course to follow but return to Louisbourg. If I had been possessed of money, it is not doubtful that I should have then quitted France to seek for service elsewhere; but the deficiency of money formed chains impossible to sever, binding continually to an unfortunate man his unlucky fate, and this is one way that fortune takes to overwhelm and immolate its victims.

I embarked at Rochelle towards the end of June, 1752, on board the "Sultan," a merchant vessel, of 300 tons, freighted for the king, and commanded by M. Roxalle, a man of spirit and education, very gentlemanly, and altogether a contrast to Fremont; he, and three other passengers on board, M. Pensence, captain at Royal Isle, M. Lory, an officer of Canada, and M. Gaville, son of the commissary of Rouen, who was stationed at Louisbourg, having been before in the French Guards. We had a very long and very annoying passage, owing to bad weather and contrary wind, which prevailed almost continually without interruption, having been twenty-four days at sea. I believe that it was impossible for the elements to form a tempest more frightful than that which we had in the "Iphigenie" on the 16th of September, 1750; but we experienced another still more furious on the 2nd of September, in the "Sultan," of which M. Roxalle, who had passed forty years of his life at sea, had never seen one equal to it. To such a degree had this temnest destroyed the tackling of the ship, that he left it on his return to Rochelle. If it had happened to us in the "Iphigenie," that rotten ship never would have been able to resist

s incredr, served ptains of y receive account they are do, some and the I to confference, he Comthe ships

self re-

men of

l of the

M. St.

ught to

to rise

ned all

iritedly

e Con-

ban his

was the

t Paris

know-

should

ess pa-

ks, the

rder to

ticoats.

nowing

ll, well

etter of

o grant

l me at

ing me

it for a moment, and we would certainly have perished without remedy. But the "Sultan" was a new ship, which had not been before but one voyage to the coast of Guinea. description which M. Roxalle set down in his journal of this tempest, having appeared to me curious, I shall enter a copy of it, which behold. "From Friday at mid-day, 1st, to Saturday mid-day, 2nd September, 1752, the wind S.S.E. to S.W., till eight o'clock at night, steering from W.N.W. two degrees west, making in this route sixteen leagues; the wind then at S.W., and increasing, we crowded all our sails, and placing from the try-sail to the fore-mast, pulled the mizen-mast below. The wind always continued to augment with a violence beyond all expression, the sea being horribly rough and blazing, passing over us, seemed as if in burning flames. I never, in my lifetime, saw such frightful weather, and, at the same time, so appalling. We have always, with the help and succour of the Lord, sustained aloft our ship, comporting itself as well as we could have hoped in this terrible weather. And not daring to bear away under mizen-mast for fear of being engulphed by the sea if we had a wind abaft. At ten o'clock the violence of the wind drove our main-sail to the wind, we having, thank God, had time to splice it to the rope's end. She tossed much, but we saved her. We had the yard pulled upon the socket. At an hour and a-half after midnight, the wind carried off our mizen-mast. She began to glide by the edge of the sheet, the rest followed. There only remained but the foot ropes. The jib, the false jib, the peroguet, would have shared the same fate, although they were very well secured; the violence of the wind having shattered and carried them away, and the yard-arm had been broken through the middle; hence this last sail being gone it weighed down cruelly our mizen-mast. I wished to cut it; the hatchet was already lifted up, but the wind having entirely torn the whole soil, we had, by the grace of God, preserved our mast. About three o'clock, a blow of the sea stove in the window

l with-

ch had

. The

of this

copy of

Satur-

o S.W.,

degrees

d then

placing

en-mast

with a

y rough

flames.

d, at the

elp and

ng itself

r. And

f being

o'elock

ind, we

e's end.

l pulled

ght, the

by the

emained

, would

ry well

carried

ugh the

d down

het was

e whole

r mast.

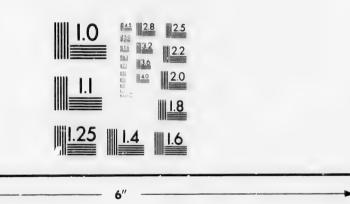
window

of the starboard of the great cabin, and shipped a great deal of water aboard, falling upon M. J——, who was there in his bed. At four o'clock, our rudder was broken; we put a capstan on the top of the helm in the main cabin to hold it, and we had, thank God, another bar-arm fixed. At six o'clock in the morning, the wind began to be less terrible; and soon after it abated. At present (mid-day) we hope the squall of wind is at an end; but we ought to attribute that the goodness and mercy of God has saved us in the imminent peril in which we found ourselves involved. May it please Him to continue, by his abundant grace, to have us in His holy keeping. The half of our fowls were found drowned in their cribs. We have had the try-sail since eight o'clock in the evening from N.W. to N.E."

Being lying in my bed in the main cabin, where there was no light, I heard towards midnight the voice of M. Pensence, who in tumbling, cried out that he was killed. I called to him several times, and receiving no answer, I believed that he was dead, or had fainted. As his servant could not help him, having been lamed a little by a similar fall, I got out of bed to fetch a lantern in order to be able to assist him, but I was rather surprised to see him upon deck, and distinguish him under the poop, with M. Roxalle, who there held by the beams of the awning with both his hands, when a wave of the sea fell upon my head and made me drink salt water in abundance. I returned immediately to the main cabin as I best could, and in great wrath, and having changed my linen and clothes, I returned to bed, fully determined that if Pensence should break his neck a thousand times, I should not budge again. He was an amiable youth, and so pleasant that his exclamations sometimes made me laugh, in spite of our horrible situation. He had come into France the year preceding to obtain the Cross of St. Louis, with the design of retiring from the service, to live in his own country, and the Court granted it to him on condition that he should come back

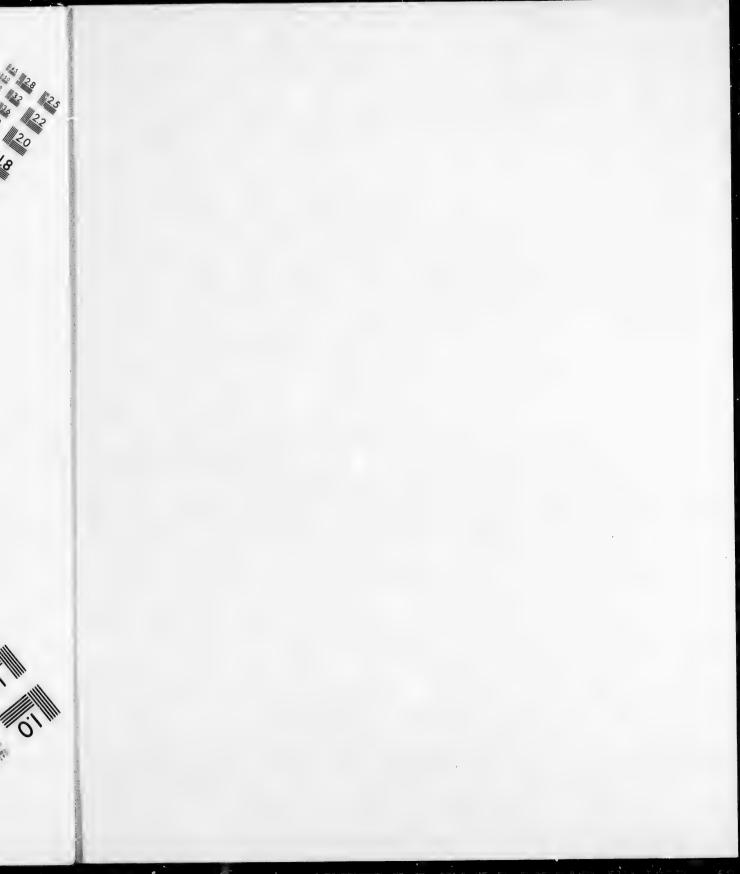
11.0 11.25 11.3 11.8 11.8

IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.7. 14580 (716) 872-4503 SIM SIM SZ



to receive it at Louisbourg. During the danger, Pensence repeated incessantly-"Cursed and execrable cross; if I had been able to foresee the horrible position in which we find ourselves, all the orders of Europe should have never tempted me to embark. What have I to do with this miserable cross? Would I not have been able to live peaceably and happily in Gascony without it!" In short, as long as the storm lasted. these were the same lamentations and regrets. The second drenching which I had, through the windows of the great cabin, despoiled me altogether, being obliged to remain with my clothes dripping, for the wave having fallen upon my mattress at the same time as upon my bed, the whole was as much steeped in sea water as the wearing apparel that was on my person. A marine officer gave me his cabin, but I was destined not to be in any respect at my ease, during this Every wave which covered the deck made the water fall continually upon my legs, through a rent which rushed incessantly like the cascade of a river.

We arrived at Louisbourg on the 14th of September, after a very long and annoying passage, owing to the bad weather and contrary winds, which prevailed almost without interruption, which but for that would have been more supportable, by the provisions of all kinds which were provided to us by the shipowner, M. Pascaut, not at all resembling the shabby things of Roderick, who without doubt imagining that the "Iphigenie" ought naturally to sink to the bottom all at once, believed it unnecessary to be at the expense of procuring us any delicacies for the voyage.

The bad climate of Louisbourg, where one does not see the sun sometimes for a month; the extreme misery which you experience from that; not having it in your power to procure a morsel of fresh meat at any price whatever; the society of the ladies of the place very amiable, but having always cards in their hands, my avocations would not permit of me daily to make one of their parties, all contributed Pensence ; if I had e find ourr tempted ble cross? happily in m lasted, he second the great main with upon my ole was as that was oin, but I uring this made the ent which

ber, after d weather interruppportable, l to us by he shabby that the ll at once, ocuring us

es not see ery which er to proever; the at having not perentributed

to cause me acquire a taste for reading and studying philosophy, very seldom going out of my room except to attend to my duty, of which I acquitted myself with the most scrupulous exactitude, or to go once or twice a week to fish for trout with my servant, St. Julien, who was an excellent Jack-ofall-trades, expert for furnishing my table, bringing generally eight or ten dozen of trouts, in two hours fishing with the line, the streams in the neighbourhood being very full of fish. Puysegur, Polybius, with the Commentaries of Folard, Feuguiere, Vegetius, the Commentaries of Cæsar, Turenne, Montecuculi, Prince Eugene, Josephus, the Roman History, and Vauban, and other books of the same description, served me for killing the time, to dispel the evils of my position, not having obtained my promotion, but only the place of interpreter to the King, who granted me four hundred livres of augmentation annually, and to dissipate the dismal ideas which would have otherwise plunged me in despair. I had a small garden in front of the windows of my chamber, which St. Julien had cleared to serve me for relaxation, when I was fatigued, and my eyes weakened by reading. I there enjoyed a true and perfect satisfaction from the esteem and friendship of all my comrades, which was not an easy matter to secure, for the corps of the Royal Isle, composed of more than a hundred officers, was divided into three factions, the ancients of the country; those who had come from Canada, and the reformed officers of France, who had their settlement at Louisbourg, and all these three mutually detested each other, and were continually quarrelling; but having entered the corps by declaring that I would not enter into their cabals, which did not mix me up, in any degree, in their disputes and animosities, so that I chose my friends on the whole where I found them to my taste, only taking my part to defend myself against those who wished to insult me, or who sought to embroil me in a quarrel; thus by the strict neutrality, which I always observed, I had always the good-will of every one,

and I heard the horrors which these officers, eternally in discord, came to tell me daily, the one against the other, without ever having a bias for one side or another, hearing them without answering them.

M. the Count of Raimond, who shewed me daily marks of his esteem and favour, having asked my promotion, they sent me a lieutenancy in 1754, by which, with the situation of interpreter to the King, I had more pay than the captains, but I was not flattered by it. Seeing how much I had reason not further to allow myself to be deceived by promises, I took the resolution of repassing into France this year, and of obtaining a company or seeking service elsewhere; and I regarded this voyage as much more indispensable, because I was at variance with the commissary of ordnance since the first year of my arrival at Louisbourg, who, by his assistants in business, was too powerful in the cabinet of the marine, and always unremitting against the governors, M. Herbiers and Raimond, who incessantly complained of him to the Court, but in vain, respecting his robberies of magazines and other knaveries. He was a finished rascal, vain and proud as a peacock, of the most obscure birth, who had a pretty amiable wife, of whom he was jealous to the last degree. He took every opportunity to thwart me and give me pain, without effect, at Louisbourg, for by acquitting myself of my duties, with all the correctness possible, I always preserved the esteem and friendship of my superiors. Fortune was not wanting to complete my misery, but to join her hatred and her hostility to my other sufferings, by the wretched climate and the bad fare. Thus being overcome, I had the melancholy satisfaction that she could not become worse.* At length the capture of Louisbourg in 1758, de-

^{*} M. James Prevost came to make himself be abhorred by all the officers, not only of the corps of the Royal Isle, but also of the regiments of Artois and Bourgogne, no officers of which, from the commanders to the ensign ever went to his house. When the English fleet appeared before

ternally in the other, er, hearing

aily marks otion, they e situation n the capw much I eceived by France this rvice elsenore indismissary of ouisbourg, rful in the gainst the antly comg his roba finished cure birth, lous to the rt me and acquitting possible, I superiors. out to join igs, by the vercome, I

d by all the regiments of inders to the seared before

ot become

1758, de-

livered me from a purgatory where I had suffered evils of every description, and not choosing to expose myself to be a prisoner of the same regiments of Lee, Warburton, and Lascelles, who had been our prisoners in Scotland at the Battle of Gladsmuir (Prestonpans), in 1745, after the capitulation of that town, I saved myself in Acadia, and from that in Canada. Hostilities having commenced in Acadia in 1754, when I was upon the point of departing for Europe, as they proclaimed an approaching war, it was not proper for me to absent myself in that critical time, and I did not think more than of continuing there, hoping by my zeal and my services to obtain my promotion, which I had never been able to effect from the supineness and weak efforts of my patrons, who were sufficiently powerful to have secured for me a more favourable situation, if they had chosen to agitate in my favour, as I had reason to hope from their promises, of which I was the dupe, through my credulity. Having had a wherry and fifty Canadians at Miremachie, in Acadia, to conduct forty English prisoners to Quebec, who were among the officers of infantry, and captains of merchant ships, I departed immediately with-

Louisbourg, in 1757, all the troops marched out upon the instant to man the intrenchments of Ances in the Bay of Gabarus, in order to oppose their landing, and M. Guerin, our surgeon-general, having given M. St. Julien a recipe for a sling, some spirits, and other things necessary for dressing wounds, Prevost replied to M. St. Julien, commandant by seniority of all our troops, "that there was nothing at all in the king's magazines, that if the English forced our intrenchments, it fell to them to take care of our wounded, and if we repulsed them they would have time to look after them." M. St. Julien reported immediately this affair with his complaints to M. Bois de la Mothe, who at the instant landed at nine o'clock at night, proceeded directly to Prevost's house, and having threatened to set it on fire, and to send him back to France, if everything which the store contained was not ready by the next day, in the morning, all was furnished, to the great disappointment of this inhuman monster, who wished from his hatred to all the officers, to make these brave people perish for want of assistance, and he wept through rage. He found the means of making himself equally despised and detested by all the officers of the ship, and M. the Prince of Listenois always treated him as the last of miscreants.

out resting more than two days. In entering the Gulf of St. Lawrence, we perceived an English squadron, which gave us chase, and we escaped from being taken by their frigates by saving ourselves in the small harbours, of which there are a great many along this coast. This was a fortunate discovery for I found M. Echaffaud at the entry of the river, with five ships of the line, which were ordered to be ready to set sail for Europe, who, ignorant that there was an English fleet in the Gulf, would have fallen into their hands; and to avoid them he passed by the straits of Belle Isle.

I was welcomed very favourably in Canada, above all by M. Levis and M. Montcalm, who immediately accorded to me their esteem, confidence, and good graces, in a distinguished manner, and M. Bigot, the commissary, the contrast of Prevost, who made it a pleasure to facilitate and solace the sufferings of unfortunate military men, gave me from the stores a complete outfit, for I was quite naked, having left my rags at Louisbourg, without having taken any other thing with me, but two shirts in my pocket. M. Levis took me for his aide-de-camp, at the commencement of the campaign of 1759; and not having a sufficiency of engineers for the immense extent of ground which our camp at Quebec occupied, a front upon the banks of the river of about two leagues, to fortify, from the River of St. Charles as far as the Fall Montmorency, I undertook to trace and conduct the intrenchments, redoubt, and battery on the left of our camp, where M. Levis commanded, on condition that I should execute them agreeably to my own ideas, and that the engineers should not interfere with them; so my own personal vanity was much flattered when the English made their descent, and attacked on the 31st of July, the works which I had constructed, and were repulsed with the loss of five hundred men. was ordered at the same time to examine the prisoners, and to translate into French their depositions. My occupations were so multifarious that I never had an hour's sleep in the the Gulf of which gave frigates by there are a discovery, with five to set sail ish fleet in d to avoid

ove all by ded to me tinguished ontrast of solace the from the ng left my her thing ok me for npaign of or the imoccupied, eagues, to all Montnchments. M. Levis em agreeld not invas much attacked nstructed. men. ners, and cupations

ep in the

twenty four; and it being impossible for M. Levis to furnish me with either coverlet, bed-clothes, or mattress, having left mine at Carillon, I always slept, quite dressed upon chairs or upon boards, in M. Levis's bedchamber, without ever daring to take off my clothes, during the campaign of 1759, but to change my linen, and very rarely my boots, except to change my stockings. It was my usual in the mornings at the break of day to be exposed to cannon shots and musketry, in visiting with M. Levis our advanced posts. These journeys occurred always the same, to carry the orders of M. Levis, or with four hundred pioneers, and the nights equally employed, to answer orders which were arriving continually, by allowing M. Levis to sleep at least, unless there was anything of importance, or to write depositions, or orders. Every one told me that it would be necessary to have a body of iron to be able to resist it; but there were three things that sustained and encouraged me in my overwhelming fatigue: my ambition to render myself useful in the service of the king, and to rise in it; my friendship and attachment for M. Levis personally; and the uncertainty of my fate, if I was taken by the English, many regiments of which had been our prisoners in Scotland, in 1745, made me look upon the preservation of this colony the same as my own proper welfare. Pecuniary interest had no part in it; for not only did I constantly refuse the contract of fascines and gabions, which had yielded to another officer twenty or thirty thousand livres, but I preferred always that the sergeants who served me as pickers should receive from the commissary the payments according to my statements, with orders immediately to distribute by themselves the money to the pioneers. Having husbanded for the king the half hours, and even to the days of those who were absent on leave, by the roll-calls, which I made four times a-day, this would have amounted to a considerable sum which one would have had it in his power to appropriate to himself, according to the then custom of the place, if I had had less of probity, straightforwardness, and sentiments; for four hundred pioneers which I had at twenty sols per day, would not have fallen short sometimes of a fourth by the roll-call.

M. Levis was sent at the beginning of August to command to Montreal, upon a false rumour that a corps of English troops were endeavouring to penetrate into the higher districts of the country; and my portmanteau was already despatched the night before with the baggage, when M. Montcalm came to his house, at the moment we were going to depart, to beg that he would leave me with him, on account of the knowledge that I had of all our posts to the Fall of Montmorency, and the plans of defence for that quarter. He consented to it; and as I loved M. Levis with a sincere attachment, I quitted him with very great regret, and tears in my eyes, desiring ardently to continue in company with him. I accompanied him until we came up with the baggage, in order to bring back again my portmanteau, and I remained with him to sleep all night, and the next day I returned to M. Montcalm's to continue with him my functions of aide-de-camp. great man, worthy of a better fate, said to me that he knew well the sacrifice I had made in quitting M. Levis, but that I should have no reason to repent it. So he constantly testified to me the same affection and friendship, as if I had been his But I repented greatly this change by his premature death, for but for that I would not have known so particularly his rare merit, and had to deplore his loss all my life.

The consequences of the death of M. Montealm, who was killed at the battle of Quebec, the 13th of September, or my usual destiny precipitated me uselessly into a horrible perplexity, from which I escaped in the end, nearly suffering the same lot. Having finished the campaign of 1759 quicker than we had reason to expect, I decided on returning to France with M. Cannon in the fall of the season. This voyage was essentially necessary for me, the more so that I found myself the oldest lieutenant of the force in Canada,

four hunwould not call.

command English r districts espatched lm came rt, to beg nowledge ncy, and ed to it; I quitted desiring ompanied to bring to sleep calm's to This he knew ut that I testified been his remature

who was er, or my able perering the quicker ening to a. This to that I Canada,

rticularly

which, alternated with that of the Royal Isle by my commission of 1754, and as there were three vacant companies of troops in that colony, I thought I had a right naturally to expect by my services to obtain one of these companies. But M. the Marquis of Vaudreuil refused me obstinately my leave, in spite of the requests of M. Levis to obtain it, being afraid apparently that I would give the Court a true detail of this campaign, which decided without remedy, the loss of Canada to France. In the meantime, he gave me his word of honour that he would render me justice, and that I should have a company; but insisting always on my getting my leave to go to France, he answered me that if I persisted in seeking my leave I should get nothing. In short, in 1760, the list of promotions having arrived, I found these companies disposed of, in favour of three officers much junior to me by many years, and no ways distinguished by their services, one of the three being the son of a hairdresser to the king, and, in consequence, the protege of the commissary. What a service is that of the French for a stranger! I was not at ease at Montreal, while they were settling the general capitulation of the Colony, in the uncertainty of the treatment that I might receive from the English, and having nothing to depend upon from the Marquis of Vaudreuil, it was time that I should bethink me of getting myself out of this bad affair as I best could, my situation having become as embarrassed and perilous as it was after the battle of Culloden. Young, colonel of an American regiment, found himself at Montreal, having been made prisoner in the battle which M. Levis had gained in the spring near Quebec. cousin-german to my brother-in-law, M. Rollo; besides, a person very considerable in the English army by his merits, talents, spirit, and character the most amiable; and all my hopes of being able to escape the evil fate that threatened me were founded upon him. I went to stay at his house, while the French and English generals were negotiating

the terms of the capitulation, and there came M. Mills, aide-de-camp to General Amherst, with two other English officers, to sup also at the house of Colonel Young, in waiting there for the answer of M. Vaudreuil to the propositions of General Amherst. I was very much disconcerted at supper; for M. Levis having given me the name of the Chevalier de Montague, while M. Young always called me that of Montague, the Ladies Erie, daughters of the merchant in whose house we lodged, called me always by my right name; and this was so often repeated, that I perceived the English officers had remarked it, and I made a sign to M. Young that I wished to speak to him in private. Having retired into a closet off the room, I said to him that it appeared necessary to confide quite plainly my secret to M. Mills; and M. Young having approved my advice, called him immediately to join us. I told him plainly my situation, that I had been with Prince Edward in Scotland; and I begged of him to tell me if he thought I ought to wait upon M. Amherst. At the same time M. Young informed M. Mills of our relationship, and of the part which he had taken warmly in my interests, recommending me strongly to his good offices with the General, and to sound his disposition in regard to me, in order that he might give us information of these next day in the morning. This aide-de-camp answered us that General Amherst, being of a character so peculiar that nobody was ever able to penetrate his intentions, he would much better not speak to him of it, the more especially as he would only remain a few days at Montreal, and that M. Murray, who would command on his departure, would be much more tractable. He added that if the General should take a violent part against me, he would know it immediately, and he gave us his word of honour to inform us of it, in good time, to enable me to save myself in the woods.

I was in a terrible alarm for some days after the English were in possession of the town. Some one came and knocked

M. Mills. English n waiting sitions of t supper; evalier de of Monin whose me; and sh officers g that I o a closet y to con-I. Young y to join een with to tell me At the tionship, interests, General, r that he morning. rst, being to penek to him few days mand on dded that he would onour to

English

myself in

rudely at the door of my room towards seven o'clock in the morning, and having opened it, I remained stupified on seeing a great young man in English uniform, about six feet high, who demanded of me if that was I, calling me by my own name, to whom he had the honour of speaking. Although I believed that he was come with a detachment to apprehend me, seeing the impossibility of being able to escape, I answered him. "Yes," and asked him at the same time what he wanted. He told me that he was my near relation, of the same name as myself, son of Lady Girthead, whom I saw in passing when I entered England with the army of Prince Edward, that he was a captain of artillery, and that before rejoining his cannoncers at Quebec, the first day by water, he had come to offer me his services, begging me to embark with him in his vessels of artillery, where I would not be recognized, to remain with him in the house, which he had furnished at Beaufort, near Quebec, where he lived with a mistress, until our troops should embark in the transport ships. I answered him that I was very sensible of his obliging offer, but that I would not for all the things in the world engage him lightly in so mischievous an adventure, and I advised him immediately to go to the house of General Murray, Amherst having departed, to tell him ingenuously that he had found at Montreal a near relation, who had been in the rebellion of Scotland, presently in the service of France; that he had a great desire to testify his civilities to him by taking him with him to his house at Beaufort, but that he would not do anything without his permission; asking him at the same time how he ought to conduct himself in that respect. He went off on the instant, and returned at the end of two hours to tell me that General Murray had answered him "that he knew for a long time as well as the whole English army, that I was in Canada; that I might remain quietly at his house without having anything to fear on his part; that if I did not seek him he would not seek me any farther; and that he offered me cordially his

compliments." My particular capitulation being thus very favourably concluded, I immediately left Montreal to repair to Beaufort, and I passed there three weeks, waiting the embarkment of our troops, with all the agreeableness possible; always in feasting, and in companies of English officers, every one with his mistress, giving alternately reat banquets at the house of my relative, as well as in theirs, where I was always of the parties; these officers showing me every sort of attentions and civilities, with a care continually of calling me M. Montague, although they knew very well my history, none of them being surprised that I spoke their language so well. I had great reason to praise their conduct in regard to me.

An Englishman asked me one day the name of the general officer, mounted upon the black horse, who had passed their army at the moment after the defeat of our army, the 13th of September the year preceding. He added that they aimed at his horse in order to dismount him, and make him prisoner; but that it turned out that his horse was invulnerable, to escape the thousand musket shots which assailed him on all sides. I answered him that it was myself; that chance had conducted me there without any desire or ambition to attain that salutation, worthy in effect of a general officer, but that their soldiers had not followed their orders, for the discharge they had aimed at me fell in the brushwood, I felt the sound of the balls which passed me at the height of the horizon, like a handful of pease which they had thrown in my face; and I showed him my dress, in which a ball had carried a piece of cloth from the shoulder. As the English had a much higher opinion of the French regiments than of the troops of the colony, I embarked in a transport vessel destined for the Regiment of royal Roussillon, with my friend M. Poularies, who placed me on the muster roll as an officer of that regiment; and we departed from Quebec the 16th of October, with all the transport vessels which the English had furnished us with, in terms of the capitulation to convey us repair to embark-; always one with nouse of res of the ions and ontague, m being ad great

general ed their 13th of imed at risoner: able, to m on all nce had o attain out that the disfelt the of the n in my carried a much troops ined for end M. fficer of 16th of

lish had

nvey us

to France. Before leaving the river St. Lawrence, we easily perceived that our ship was old, rotten, and resembling altogether the "Iphigenie"; still we had the hope to keep ourselves afloat, and of having succour in case of need; but at the end of three days after having left the Gulf, we found ourselves alone, without company, and left to Providence, not being able to proceed so fast as the other vessels! They left us altogether behind them. The days of All Saints and St. Martin's we had two furious gales of wind at the top of the Azores. Our vessel made a flood of water which would have caused us sink to the bottom, if a canvas, which they attached to the end of a rope, had not been plunged into the sea, with a great lump of grease at the handle to block it up. to wait until good weather should allow the carpenter to work at it; and the ship being open, as the "Iphigenie" had been, they bound it about with a cable. After these gales of wind we found again a ship of our fleet, in which were M. Mouy, M. Druillon, and some other officers of Canada; and having told them the miserable condition of our vessel, and the danger we were in, expecting at every instant to sink to the bottom, we prayed them earnestly not to part from us. We remained together for three days, until another gale of wind separated us. At last we arrived in the roadstead of the island of Re, the 3rd of December, in the evening, where we anchored at once; and a pilot came on board to conduct us the next day to Rochelle, which is five leagues from that.

As it turned out fine weather, the English captain, from the vanity of not letting the bad condition of his ship be known to his acquaintances, loosed immediately the cable and other things which he had made use of to secure the ship. At midnight the wind began to rise, and became in a very short time a most frightful hurricane. We let down in a moment two anchors of the three which we had, and the pilot of the Island of Re, who had a melancholy countenance, at finding himself involved so opportunely in our disastrous adventure, told us

that the cable of the third anchor would soon be broken as the others, adding that there was no other way of avoiding perishing all souls and goods upon the rocks, with which the island was on all sides surrounded, than to endeavour to make a voluntary shipwreck in the river of Maraine, the bottom of which is muddy; and he told us that for little if the ship would carry sufficient sail to be able to govern her, he hoped to save the life of all by conducting her thither. His salutary advice was immediately followed forthwith by the English captain. We cast out immediately our last cable, but the first sail which they set was in an instant shattered in pieces like sheets of paper; in the meantime having tried the mainsail, which stood better than the other, he dashed us to the side of the entrance which he proposed to take, and our ship entered the basin like as in a pot of butter, without feeling the least shock; they then set the sails to fix as far as it was possible the ship in the basin, fearing that the wind coming, might throw us to the other side upon the rocks, and we were immediately anchored, having nothing more to fear. The next day in the morning, in a calm sea, I reached the land by means of a ladder and planks, which they had placed on the Quay, the 5th December, 1760, and after having kissed the ground with good heart, I entered into a naval hotel, where I found an abundance of excellent oysters and white wine, fully determined not to put myself again in the power of Neptune.

Fortune has not been more favourable to me since my return to France, having always continued her persecutions without ceasing with an invincible obstinacy; and there is no appearance at present that she will cease to overwhelm me but by finishing my existence, perhaps from the want of the necessaries of life, my lot not being likely to be ameliorated at my age. I can well verify what Artabanes said to Xerxes, when he shed tears, on reviewing his innumerable army, at the passage of the Hellespont, by the reflection that in a hundred years there would not be one of that great mul-

broken as the iding perishh the island to make a he bottom of e ship would oped to save ntary advice lish captain. he first sail s like sheets nsail, which side of the entered the least shock: the ship in w us to the anchored. e morning, ladder and

e since my ersecutions there is no whelm me ant of the meliorated to Xerxes, ble army, on that in reat mul-

December, od heart, I indance of not to put titude alive. "But are we not exposed during life to things more melancholy and pitiable than these? for during the short time that he is in the world, there has not been a man so happy as not to have wished many times to die rather than to live.* In fact, diseases and misfortunes disturb the most delightful days of life, and are the cause that, noreover, although so short, it is thought long and wearisome. Thus death is to men the wished for refuge of an unhappy life; and one may say that God, who is immortal, treats us with rigour in giving us life on conditions so annoying.†"—Herodotus.

* The joys of life, in the experience of most, if not of all men, I should say, preponderate.—Eb.

[†] Without approving of the last remark of the heathen Historian, we may observe that the philosophical and thoughtful reflections of the Chevalier throughout this work, and particularly in the notes, hitherto unpublished, add a value to it, which will be duly appreciated by every cultivated mind, and which has certainly not a little relieved the tedium of the labour in the hands of the Translator.—ED.

G. CORNWALL AND SONS, PRINTERS AND LITHOGRAPHERS, ABERDEEN.